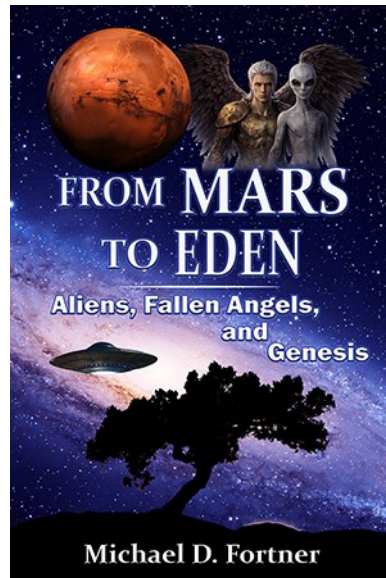


# FROM MARS TO EDEN

Aliens, Fallen Angels,  
and Genesis



Thunder Press, Lawton, OK

Version 1.0 2026

Copyright © 2026 by Michael D. Fortner. All rights reserved

All scripture verses are from the Holy Bible, Modern English Version.  
Copyright © 2014 by Military Bible Association. Published and distributed by  
Charisma House. Used by permission.

#### Abbreviations & Volumes Used:

ESV – English Standard Version

KJV – King James Version

LIT – Green’s Literal Translation, or The Literal Translation

NKJV – New King James Version

NAB – New American Standard (Revised Edition)

NEB – New English Bible

YLT – Young’s Literal Translation

CWD – Complete Word Study Dictionary: New Testament,

LXX – Septuagint, the Greek translation of the Old Testament (in English)

Strong’s numbering is in parentheses ( ).

Author: Fortner, Michael D.

Title: *From Mars to Eden: Aliens, Fallen Angels, and Genesis*

1. Aliens 2. Genesis 3. Noah’s Flood 4. Abductions 5. Reptilians 6.  
Nephilim 7. Gap Theory 8. Ancient Mars 9. UFOs

Learn about other books by the author at:

[www.michaelfortner.com](http://www.michaelfortner.com)

[www.usbibleprohecy.com](http://www.usbibleprohecy.com)

Image used for the cover is Andromeda galaxy, taken by Luc Vi-  
atour, [wikimedia.org](https://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Andromeda_Galaxy.jpg):

<https://Lucnix.be>

Cover designed and created by the author.

All images are either from Wikimedia, Wikicommons, purchased from sights such as shutterstock.com, or are Fair Use.

## **Fair Use Notice**

US Federal Law under Section 107 of the Copyright Act 1976, allows for the use of copy-righted material for purposes of criticism, news reporting, teaching, research, and commentary, without the need for permission from or payment to the copyright holder.

## **About the Author**

Michael D. Fortner has a B.A. in journalism with a minor in history. He has a God-given ability to think outside the box and figure things out.

He is also the author of:

*Editing God: Textual Criticism and Modern Bibles Analyzed*

*The Fall of Babylon USA With Prophecies of Civil War and Invasion*

*Bible Prophecy Revealed* (coming in 2026)

*The Return of Christ and Three Days of Darkness* (coming in 2027)

**\*\*This author does NOT sign books, before or after you buy it.\*\***

If you enjoy this free PDF, consider leaving a review online. The bibliography and index have been removed from this free PDF. Please consider purchasing the full color print edition on Amazon.com, which has better quality color images than the edition in bookstores.

## Table of Contents

|                   |   |
|-------------------|---|
| Introduction..... | 1 |
|-------------------|---|

### **Chapter 1: Satan's Home Planet Destroyed**

|                                      |    |
|--------------------------------------|----|
| The Fall of Satan's Alien Race ..... | 8  |
| Rahab and the Stones of Fire .....   | 12 |
| The Ancient Exploded Planet .....    | 17 |
| The Exploded Planet Theory .....     | 19 |

### **Chapter 2: Ancient Artifacts of Mars and Earth**

|                              |    |
|------------------------------|----|
| The Face on Mars .....       | 22 |
| Mars Artifacts .....         | 31 |
| Ancient Earth Artifacts..... | 34 |

### **Chapter 3: Of Humanity and Angels**

|                                           |    |
|-------------------------------------------|----|
| Pre-Existence of the Soul .....           | 41 |
| Who are the Elohim?.....                  | 45 |
| Who are The Sons of God?.....             | 49 |
| Sons of the Evil One.....                 | 51 |
| More Human-Angel Evidence .....           | 55 |
| The Jewish View of Humans and Angels..... | 59 |
| Several Different Alien Races .....       | 61 |
| The Angel-Human Connection .....          | 63 |

### **Chapter 4: Understanding Genesis**

|                                      |    |
|--------------------------------------|----|
| The Mytho-History of Genesis.....    | 68 |
| The Pre-Adamite (Gap) Theory .....   | 71 |
| The Gap Theory Analyzed .....        | 74 |
| Genesis 1:2 .....                    | 75 |
| Without Form and Void .....          | 78 |
| Other Points of the Gap Theory ..... | 83 |
| The Revised Gap Theory .....         | 85 |
| Humanity and Adam and Eve .....      | 88 |

### **Chapter 5: The Fall of Humanity**

|                                         |    |
|-----------------------------------------|----|
| Satan's Identity and The Watchers ..... | 92 |
|-----------------------------------------|----|

|                                         |     |
|-----------------------------------------|-----|
| Physical Beings or Spirit Beings? ..... | 98  |
| The Fall in the Garden of Eden .....    | 99  |
| The Curse .....                         | 106 |

## **Chapter 6: The Nephilim - Giants**

|                            |     |
|----------------------------|-----|
| The Nephilim .....         | 109 |
| The Ascended Masters ..... | 114 |

## **Chapter 7: Noah's Flood**

|                                          |     |
|------------------------------------------|-----|
| The Genesis Flood .....                  | 117 |
| The Whole World of the Bible .....       | 118 |
| Old Testament Comets and Asteroids ..... | 120 |
| Other Flood Myths .....                  | 123 |
| Noah's Ark .....                         | 133 |
| White and Dark Races .....               | 136 |
| Global Population at The Flood .....     | 137 |
| The Younger Dryas Impact .....           | 142 |

## **Chapter 8: Ancient Tales of Cataclysm** .....145

## **Chapter 9: Ancient Aliens**

|                               |     |
|-------------------------------|-----|
| The Shining Ones .....        | 155 |
| Ancient Reptilians .....      | 157 |
| The Nazca Mummies .....       | 163 |
| Two Reptilian Rocks .....     | 165 |
| Ancient Aliens Returned ..... | 166 |
| Historical UFO Evidence ..... | 169 |

## **Chapter 10: Modern Aliens**

|                                |     |
|--------------------------------|-----|
| Twentieth-Century Aliens ..... | 174 |
| Orbs .....                     | 177 |
| UFOs .....                     | 179 |

## **Chapter 11: Alien Wars** .....184

## **Chapter 12: Disinformation and Falsehoods**

|                                 |     |
|---------------------------------|-----|
| Government Disinformation ..... | 190 |
| Zecharia Sitchin .....          | 191 |

|                                                                  |            |
|------------------------------------------------------------------|------------|
| Ancient Aliens TV Show .....                                     | 197        |
| A Fake Mars Mission-Video .....                                  | 200        |
| The Fake Alien Psyop .....                                       | 200        |
| <b>Chapter 13: Interplanetary Space Vehicles.....</b>            | <b>205</b> |
| <b>Chapter 14: ET Communication and Crop Circles .....</b>       | <b>211</b> |
| <b>Chapter 15: The Alien Agenda Against Humanity</b>             |            |
| New Age Aliens .....                                             | 218        |
| Abductions and the Planned Takeover .....                        | 223        |
| Hybrids on Earth.....                                            | 229        |
| Men in Black .....                                               | 235        |
| Mental and Physical Problems .....                               | 238        |
| <b>Chapter 16: More Alien Info and Insights</b>                  |            |
| Different Races and MILABS .....                                 | 241        |
| The Sad Christian View .....                                     | 243        |
| Alien Soul Control .....                                         | 244        |
| One-World Government.....                                        | 247        |
| Who Is In Control? .....                                         | 248        |
| <b>Chapter 17: Reptilians and Shapeshifters</b>                  |            |
| Reptilians and More .....                                        | 249        |
| Reptilian Shapeshifters .....                                    | 251        |
| The Vatican Connection.....                                      | 259        |
| Final Words.....                                                 | 262        |
| <b>Chapter 18: God's Plan to Save Humanity</b>                   |            |
| <b>From Aliens .....</b>                                         | <b>263</b> |
| <b>Chapter 19: Conclusion.....</b>                               | <b>269</b> |
| Recommended Books and Videos For<br>Additional Information ..... | 274        |
| Scriptures for Salvation.....                                    | 275        |
| <b>Selected Bibliography .....</b>                               | <b>276</b> |
| <b>Index.....</b>                                                | <b>280</b> |

## Introduction

*The time will come when diligent research over long periods will bring to light things which now lay hidden. A single lifetime would not be enough for the investigation of so vast a subject, so this knowledge will be unfolded only through long successive ages. . . . Many discoveries are reserved for ages still to come . . . - Seneca (Natural Questions, Book 7)*

This book contains explosive and cutting-edge insights that many Christians will have difficulty accepting. It follows other books that have somewhat covered the same topics, such as the classic, *Cydonia: The Secret Chronicles of Mars*, by David Flynn, and *The Monuments of Mars*, by Richard C. Hoagland. However, I investigate much further with biblical and theological evidence for reptilians having lived on Mars and another planet named Rahab in real physical bodies. The evidence will show that Satan was a reptilian on Rahab. That is where he became lifted with pride and fell from—which is the second heaven.

I also provide new insights and observations on the Fall of Adam and Eve, the Nephilim, Noah's Flood, ancient aliens on Earth, modern aliens, the alien agenda and how they plan to take over Earth and enslave humanity.

There were occasions during my research when my jaw literally dropped open, and it is not easy to shock me. One of the astonishing discoveries I made connects the famous Face on Mars to a long-existing Inca artifact, currently in a museum, that depicts the surface of Mars and even clearly shows the Face on Mars. No one has seen Mars on this artifact until my discovery.

One discovery led to another, elevating this book to an entirely different level compared to other books on the subject, with numerous revelations that reveal remarkable connections between angels, humans, and aliens. We are connected.

This book provides answers to questions for which we previously lacked satisfactory and believable answers, such as how Satan and the angels fell, why God created the human race and then allowed Satan in the Garden to tempt Adam and Eve, thereby leading to the Fall of humanity, the real reason why God will send people to hell, and many other related questions.

In the novels about Sherlock Holmes, the detective had the skill to see pieces of evidence that other investigators could not see. He could observe seemingly insignificant or unrelated events and connect them to arrive at astonishing conclusions. Rather than following apparently impossible trails of evidence to solve crimes like Sherlock Holmes, I have followed historical and biblical evidence to unravel the greatest mysteries of all time— who we are, why we are here, the origin of Satan and how he fell, who the aliens are, and why they are here. Everything is connected.

If someone had outright told me some of the most shocking information in this book just weeks before I began my research, I would not have believed it. I would have said, *No freaking way, you're nuts*. This is why this book is only for open-minded truth seekers who can accept the evidence.

One of the first things I learned is that we are all angels. Yes, the human soul/spirit is the same as angels, but most of us are Fallen angels. Surprisingly, I am not the first person to believe we are all angels, or that Satan lived on another planet in this solar system, or that God destroyed it. I do not know who originated these ideas, but I am certainly not the first person to teach them.

However, I go further into the details, with new insights and conclusions: The Fall of Satan took place on the planet Rahab, when he was a reptilian creature that worshiped the one true God. Then Satan became lifted up in pride and led one-third of the reptilians to begin worshiping him. But because the reptilians on Mars refused to worship Satan, he destroyed them with nuclear weapons; such explosions have been proven to have occurred on Mars. Then the survivors used an even more powerful weapon that caused Rahab to explode into a billion pieces, thus creating the asteroid belt.

There is a surprising amount of evidence to support my claims, yet these new insights will be “hard truths” for many people. I know from learning and experience that people are not easily convinced by evi-

dence, especially if they have believed falsehoods for decades. You can present a mountain of evidence to support your case, yet the response is, “*No, you’re wrong.*” People believe what they want to believe, or what they have always believed, while ignoring evidence that contradicts their view. This makes it challenging to change the minds of a significant number of people. Therefore, this book is only for people who are able to accept the evidence.

If you believe it is a sin to even believe in the existence of aliens, then this book is not for you. If you believe there cannot be female angels simply because none appear in the Bible, then this book is not for you. Just because something is not in the Bible does not mean it is false; there is much truth that is not inside the pages of the Bible.

Many Christians are still in the Dark Ages when it comes to UFOs and extraterrestrial life. In early 2022, a Christian website published a shockingly misguided viewpoint:

In my mind, an alien is therefore no different from an elf, mermaid, or fairy. ([www.biblestudytools.com/bible-study/topical-studies/what-does-the-bible-say-about-aliens-and-extraterrestrial-beings.html](http://www.biblestudytools.com/bible-study/topical-studies/what-does-the-bible-say-about-aliens-and-extraterrestrial-beings.html))

This is on the same level as believing the stars in the night sky are merely holes in the floor of heaven. No wonder it is mostly Christians who believe the world is flat. Yet Christians dare to complain about the lack of thinking among those who believe in evolution and other failed theories.

Leonardo Da Vinci said:

“There are three kinds of people: Those who see; those who see when they are shown; and those who cannot see.”

I admit that I was slow to believe that the USA is called Babylon the Great in Revelation chapters 17 and 18; however, after carefully examining the evidence, I was forced to believe it. The ability to adjust your opinions based on the evidence is important if you are going to learn and grow into deeper truths. We should not believe something is true solely because it comes from a large, powerful organization like the Freemasons, a particular church denomination, or the government.

Interpreters of the Bible err by assuming that all Scripture should be understood at full face value. Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden is a factual story but was written as an allegory that encodes the truth; therefore, it is referred to as “mytho-history.” My examination of the Garden of Eden story reveals astonishing insights; some have never be-

fore been seen. Humanity likely existed for thousands of years before the Fall took place, because the Fall was brought about by extraterrestrials (ETs), which the Book of Enoch calls Watchers. They were some of the same Fallen angel-reptilians who nuked Mars.

When the Book of Enoch said the Watchers were Fallen angels who descended and gave humanity knowledge of farming, science, warfare, casting spells, etc., it was referring to aliens who had Fallen away from God on their home planet before coming to Earth. Most of them were reptilians, but Enoch said the Watchers were of many different “forms,” or bodies, i.e., several different ET races.

There are individuals who are debunking the false claims and exaggerations of the Ancient Aliens TV show and related books. However, critical thinkers should not be so close-minded as to rule out the possibility that extraterrestrials have visited Earth and shared advanced knowledge with early humans. Satan does not want his guilt revealed, and he does not want Christians to pray against his army of highly advanced alien beings. Therefore, he is working hard to keep people in the dark on this subject by using distorted facts and even disinformation.

The oldest known clay tablets depict a Sumerian god teaching humanity about farming, science, war, etc. Therefore, the Anunnaki are in fact aliens, but not because Zacharia Sitchin said so; most of his conclusions are wrong. They did not alter the DNA of primitive humans to make them smart enough to mine for gold. A reasonable analysis of the evidence will show that his lie is outright laughable. Yet, even before that chapter, the information presented in this book proves Sitchin wrong. This is not just fanciful storytelling with no documentation like Sitchin’s unsupported books; this book is heavily documented with quotes and references.

Sitchin’s many deceived followers are continuing his legacy of blind-leading-the-blind, by producing even more books and videos that perpetuate the same nonsense. There is even a fellow who was once a Christian pastor in Australia who left the pastorate and now writes books claiming that aliens created humanity, all because of Sitchin’s lies about history and the Bible. Paul Wallis was in the Anglican Church in Australia for thirty-three years, a Theological Educator, and an Archdeacon until he listened to Sitchin’s forked tongue.

I understand why many Christians believe that modern aliens visiting Earth are merely demons or Fallen angels, because most of them are evil, cause pain and suffering to their abductees, and can even float through walls. However, what people fail to notice is that they also transport human bodies through walls and ceilings while being abducted. They do not use spiritual demonic power for this, but activate other dimensions.

Christians need to know all about this enemy, but they mostly just categorize the entire UFO-alien phenomenon as fake, or fallen angels. Many Christians actually believe aliens are demons who are merely pretending to be aliens. As such, many Christians do not believe aliens are real beings who are actively working against humans here on Earth. No, demons do not travel in spacecraft; Fallen angels do not have a hybrid program where they are breeding half-human, half-Fallen angel beings, LOL. But there are alien-human hybrids currently walking among us; they are evil, and most Christians have no clue that they are actively carrying out their plan to take control of Earth.

Some Christians even claim that the belief that aliens are real is incompatible with Christianity! Say what? Yet other Christians claim that the Antichrist will be an alien.

Because alien interference does not fit with the worldview of most Christians, they have difficulty accepting that aliens are real and that they have been visiting Earth since before Adam and Eve. Like the flat-Earthers who continue to write books and hold seminars teaching that the world is flat while ignoring the enormous amounts of evidence that clearly prove them wrong, many Christians will continue to deny aliens or just say they are demons, even if aliens make a public appearance.

One guy online told me that aliens were demons because there were 2,000 reported crashes of UFOs with no debris or bodies found. If you do not understand how that is fantasy nonsense, then this book is way over your head. Do not buy a book that you are not smart enough to comprehend, then give it a 1-star rating, LOL. I include photos of UFOs, and even aliens; some alive, some dead. But *don't believe your lyin eyes*; don't do it!

If you find it challenging to consider that Earth is older than 6,000 years, then this book may not be for you. (That said, I do not believe the official ages given for the history of Earth; carbon-14 dating is unreliable.)

Note: The purpose of this book is not to fully document and educate the reader about the existence and history of aliens, because that would fill several thick books. Since many people have already read books and watched videos on aliens and UFOs, I assume that you know something about them; therefore, I will not go into great detail on the basics. Even so, I will give some basic info for those not familiar with the subject. However, I take it further and present evidence that most people have never heard, some of it is original to this book.

There are literally hundreds of books and videos on aliens and UFOs, especially on YouTube.com (YT). However, you should understand that most of them are produced by people who are not Bible believers, so you must be able to filter out the truth from all the distorted information. This book will educate Christians on the alien question, allowing them to better process those books and documentaries that contain a mix of truth and error.

A detailed examination of cited Scripture is necessary to properly understand my theories and conclusions. Therefore, several chapters contain a lot of deep Scriptural analysis and commentary. Even though I do not read Greek and Hebrew, I am an able detective of written texts, and I quote from scholars while consulting Hebrew and Greek lexicons and dictionaries. I also include much extra-biblical information to support Scripture.

I engage in some theological discussion and speculation concerning angels and aliens, along with an analytical examination of all the available evidence. It is important to properly understand the connection between the ancient aliens and the Fall of Man, because it profoundly impacts Christian doctrine and the fate of humanity.

None of the information in this book contradicts the historic doctrines that are fundamental to salvation, but only doctrines that have no bearing on salvation. Even so, the discoveries presented here will likely get me labeled a heretic, so I now provided a short Statement of Faith.

I believe the *Apostle's Creed* and the *Nicene Creed*. But to get even more specific:

\* I believe that Jesus was NOT an angel; that he was both God and man; he lived a human life and died on the cross for our sins, rose from the dead on the 3rd day, and will return to judge the world.

\* I believe that God is three in one: Father, Son, and Holy Spirit.

\* I believe in a literal devil who rules many Fallen angels and demons.

\* I believe in the authority of Scripture and its literal interpretation, except when it is figurative, but it also needs factual interpretation.

This book will answer many, but not all, of the questions people have about our origins with new, never-before-given insights and theories. I also cover why people lived very long lives before the Flood, what the Tree of Life was, what the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was, and more. We will also learn the origin of the spirits that the New Age movement calls “ascended masters,” or “wisdom keepers.” They are mentioned in the Bible and ancient texts. I even reveal where one has been imprisoned here in North America for thousands of years.

Most scientists will only teach what is officially approved by the government; otherwise, they lose their funding or their jobs. It is the same way in religion; preachers will only preach what is officially approved by their denominations, or what the people can easily accept. Almost any discovery is going to contradict some currently “accepted” belief. Therefore, many advances in science or religion are made outside of official channels. This is why Jesus was an outsider; he was not a priest of the Sadducees or Pharisees, and they killed him. This situation explains why many preachers refuse to accept anything that contradicts the “accepted” truth.

God sent Noah’s Flood to wipe the Earth clean of the global civilization that the aliens created here on Earth thousands of years ago, with human-alien hybrids and giants called Nephilim (not all hybrids are giants). It appears that God will have to wipe the Earth once again, but the next destruction will be with fire.

Hold on to your hat, you are in for amazing ride!

## Chapter 1

### Satan's Home Planet Destroyed

*It is mathematically certain that other planets are inhabited. --  
Nicola Tesla (New York World Telegram, July 9, 1932)*

Only a few people have been able to comprehend what is presented in this chapter. The information will stretch your brain cells further than they have ever been stretched. Here is the big picture of what happened eons ago in this solar system. I begin where it all started.

#### The Fall of Satan's Alien Race

Some Bible researchers believe that Satan once lived on a planet Scripture names Rahab. He lived on this planet even though he was supposedly just a spiritual being, *they believe*. However, angels are spirit-beings and do not have any need or reason to live on planets unless they are inside physical bodies.

I had spent most of my life believing traditional Christian doctrine on this topic; that Satan was an archangel in heaven who somehow, mysteriously, became lifted up in pride. Then somehow, mysteriously, he convinced one-third of the angels to follow him in rebellion against God. Even though they knew God face-to-face, for some unknown reason, they supposedly rebelled against him and were all kicked out of heaven. Once I realized that the Watchers of Enoch are those Fallen angels, and that the Fall of humanity took place when those angels were in physical bodies, then things began to make sense. This insight led to other pieces of the puzzle also falling into place.

Satan fell because he was lifted up within himself:

How you have fallen from heaven, shining one, son of the dawn! How you are cut down to the ground, who laid the nations low!

...You said in your heart, "I will ascend into heaven! I will exalt my throne above the stars of God! I will sit on the mountain of assembly, in the far north!

...I will ascend above the heights of the clouds! I will make myself like the Most High!"

...Yet you shall be brought down to Sheol, to the depths of the pit. (Isa. 14:12-15) (WEB)

The NIV says:

How you have fallen from heaven, morning star, son of the dawn!

...You have been cast down to the Earth,  
you who once laid low the nations!

...You said in your heart, "I will ascend to the heavens;  
I will raise my throne above the stars of God; . . .

In case you don't grasp it, Satan was planning to build himself an empire and make himself a god. Notice also that he "*laid low the nations.*" In John 8:44, Jesus called Satan a "*murderer from the beginning.*" Nowhere is it recorded that Satan murdered anyone in heaven before he was supposedly cast out. How could he even kill an angel? So it must refer to him murdering physical beings on a planet.

The "*heavens*" refers to outer space. Was he planning to travel through space? The "*stars of God*" refer to angels (in bodies).

But what kind of body did these first intelligent beings have? I believe the evidence points to Satan's race being what we commonly call reptilians. These reptilians had colonized three planets in this solar system: Mars, Rahab, and Earth. Some reptilians are reportedly on board the present-day UFOs with the grays. They appear to be working together and are supposed to look like this:



Notice the last line in the above quote: "*I will raise my throne above the stars of God.*" He was likely planning to become a great interstellar conqueror; ruler of many realms.

Finally, 2 Enoch describes the Fall of Satan as follows:

But one from the order of the archangels deviated, together with the division that was under his authority. He thought up the impossible idea, that he might place his throne higher than the clouds which are above the Earth, and that he might become equal to my power.

And I hurled him out from the height, together with his angels. And he was flying around in the air, ceaselessly above the Bottomless. (29:3-4)  
(Translation by F. Andersen)

Notice the last underlined words above; Satan was thrown from his home planet to Earth.

## Summary

I will first provide the summary of how Satan fell and was cast to Earth and then present the evidence. In long ages past, when God created the universe, he fashioned many different races of intelligent beings on various planets. NOT all of these beings were indwelt by angels, but the ones in this solar system did indeed have angel-spirits. After many thousands of years of their existence, the aliens became technologically advanced and able to manipulate DNA and travel through space.

(There are likely several races who have Fallen, and some who merely have animal spirits, but it is also probable that some of the alien races are indwelt by angels who never fell.)

Satan was the leader of this highly advanced civilization of reptilians on the planet Rahab, which established colonies on Mars and Earth. Then Satan became full of pride: *Look at this race of beings, which I have led to become great.* Thus, he became Fallen, and he convinced one-third of them to worship him instead of God. But Satan was furious that only one-third of the reptilians would worship him (Rev. 12:4), and there was “*war in the heaven*” (Rev. 12:7). Then Satan became a mass “murderer” (John 8:44) when he nuked Mars, killing millions, perhaps billions. So God caused his home planet, Rahab, to explode (“*I destroyed you*” Ezek. 28:16), thus creating the asteroid belt. (God did this with the aliens who survived the Mars attack.) But Satan and many of his followers survived the destruction of Rahab.

Then God said to himself: *How am I going to regain my Fallen angels? They are part of the family of God, but I cannot just give them blanket amnesty.* So, he formed this plan: God would create a more attractive race of beings on Earth after it recovered from the explosion of Rahab, and the surviving reptilians would eventually show up and bring the Fall to humanity. Then God would send his Son to live and die as a human for the sins of all those who repent. The Fallen reptilians who died are being reborn here on Earth as humans so they can have a chance at redemption. We are them, and they are us.

Once the destruction of his planet occurred, Satan fled (the “*fleeing serpent*” Job 26:12). But God had declared that he and his surviving followers would be “*cast down to the Earth*” (Rev. 12:9).

Before Rahab exploded into a billion pieces, the evil reptilians were able to escape on spaceships, but most of the ships were damaged to the point that they were unable to travel long distances searching for another home planet. Satan could not flee to Mars because the reptilians who survived his attack would not allow him to settle there, so they merely time-traveled millions of years into the future (time travel is a reality). He examined Mars once again, but it could no longer sustain life because of the damage caused by nuclear weapons, so he went to Earth and found it a paradise with beautiful humans living there.

As expected, the reptilians could not believe their eyes when they saw those beautiful human women and desired to have offspring with them (Gen. 6). So a group of 200 landed (1 Enoch 6) on Earth to live here and create a hybrid race of human-reptilians. They also used DNA gene manipulation in their lab to create giants and human-animal hybrids.

It came out in 2025 that humans have been able to remove the extra chromosome that results in Down syndrome to restore normal function in lab-grown cells. Humans have also created chimeras. If we can do these things, then the advanced aliens can do even more.

After they caused the Fall of humanity (Gen. 3), the growing population of alien/human hybrids, as well as giants, spread throughout much of the world. Once God had enough of their evil, he caused comets to smash into Earth, causing Noah’s Flood, which destroyed Atlantis and other cities around the world.

So, God killed off all the aliens, including Satan, and the majority of their offspring that were living here. Since Satan was now merely a spirit without a body, God made him into “*the god of this world*” (2 Cor. 4:4) and “*the prince of the power of the air, the spirit who now works in the sons of disobedience*” (Ephesians 2:2).

The spirits of those billions of dead aliens killed in the destruction of their home planet are now being born as humans here on Earth, which will give them a chance to be restored to their heavenly family. Now for the biblical evidence.

## Rahab and the Stones of Fire

Many years ago, I read an interpretation of Ezek. 28 that was far ahead of me at the time, but I saved it on my PC. Then during my research for this book, I came across it again and instantly recognized its significance as an important piece of the puzzle. So, special thanks to Jason Guenther at [www.ryanmcginty.com/fallen/](http://www.ryanmcginty.com/fallen/) for putting me on the right track (though I don't agree with all of his interpretations). Most Bible scholars understand that Ezek. 28 refers to Satan, but if you only recognize him as a spiritual being, then you cannot get the full understanding.

The Bible has many cryptic passages that sometimes use what is called *a play on words*. Rahab is usually translated *pride*, but because of the context, it is sometimes translated as a proper name. *Rahab* in Job 26:12 is translated two different ways. The KJV translates Job 26:12 as, “by his understanding he smiteth through the proud.” But in the ESV, it is “he shattered Rahab.” Now read it in context:

The pillars of heaven tremble and are astounded at his rebuke.

By his power he stilled the sea; by his understanding he shattered Rahab.

By his wind the heavens were made fair; his hand pierced the fleeing serpent. (Job 26:11-13) (ESV)

The NIV said God “*cut Rahab to pieces*.” The TLV said, “*smashed Rahab*.” The WEB said, “*strikes through Rahab*.” Notice the last few words of the verse, “*his hand pierced the fleeing serpent*.” Satan is the dragon, or serpent. He was not killed, but he was wounded and fled from Rahab before it exploded.

Now that we have the basic assumption that Satan lived in a physical body on a planet named Rahab, but God shattered it, let us read a few other passages. Even the KJV agrees here:

Thou hast broken Rahab in pieces, as one that is slain;

thou hast scattered thine enemies with thy strong arm. (Psalm 89:10) (KJV)

The ESV says, “*You crushed Rahab*.” Some commentators believe it refers to Egypt but do not understand why it would. I believe it refers to a planet.

Was it not You who cut Rahab to pieces and wounded the dragon? (Isa. 51:9)

God, through the reptilians on Mars, caused Rahab to explode into a billion pieces. Here again it says he was wounded.

There are parts of the next passage that are widely acknowledged by many to be about Satan, while there are also many commentators who claim it only refers to a human king. Part of it fits the king of Tyre, but part of it only fits Satan, and part could fit both:

- The word of the Lord came again to me, saying:  
 2 Son of man, say to the leader of Tyre, Thus says the Lord God:  
 Because your heart is lifted up, and you have said,  
 "I am a god; I sit in the seat of gods  
 in the midst of the seas," yet you are a man, and not God,  
 though you set your heart as the heart of God.  
 3 You are wiser than Daniel;  
there is no secret that is a match for you.  
 4 With your wisdom and with your understanding,  
 you have obtained riches for yourself, and have obtained gold and silver into your treasuries;  
 5 by your great wisdom, by your trade,  
 you have increased your riches, and your heart is lifted up  
 because of your riches.  
 6 Therefore thus says the Lord God:  
 Because you have set your heart  
 as the heart of God, 7 therefore, I will bring strangers upon you,  
 the most cruel of the nations;  
 and they shall draw their swords against the beauty of your wisdom,  
 and defile your brightness.  
 8 They shall bring you down to the pit, and you shall die  
the death of those who are slain in the midst of the seas.  
 9 Will you yet say before him who slays you,  
 "I am a god," although you are a man and not God,  
 in the hands of those who wound you?  
 10 You shall die the death of the uncircumcised  
 by the hand of strangers; for I have spoken! says the Lord God.  
 A Lament for the King of Tyre  
 11 Moreover the word of the Lord came to me, saying:  
 12 Son of man, take up a lamentation over the king of Tyre and say to him,  
 Thus says the Lord God: You had the seal of perfection,  
full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. (Ezk. 28)

Now, if we read Ezekiel 28 with the idea that Satan lived on Rahab as the ruler of a race of reptilians who had advanced to the point of being able to engage in space travel and colonize other planets, then we can understand the chapter when it speaks of a king who is very intelli-

gent, and he becomes lifted up in pride to the point of thinking he is a god. But God caused his opponents to be victorious against him, which resulted in his entire planet being destroyed.

But it also said he is killed by water. Since Satan did not die during the attack on Rahab but was only wounded, and we learned that he was killed by water, then this means he died in Noah's Flood.

Even though a reptilian is not beautiful to us, beauty is in the eye of the beholder, so Satan was clearly beautiful in his own eyes (at least until he saw humans). The next verse puts him in the Garden of Eden, which tells us without a doubt that this passage is about much more than the king of Tyre.

Note that a few researchers believe the "*stones of fire*" refer to planets. But I found one commentary that said, "*It may be that the 'stones of fire' is a way of saying the stars of heaven*" (<https://bibleresources.info>). When the Bible refers to the stars in the sky, it refers to suns and planets.

- 13 You were in Eden, the garden of God;  
 every precious stone was your covering:  
 the sardius, topaz, and the diamond,  
 the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper,  
 the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold.  
 The workmanship of your settings and sockets was in you;  
 on the day that you were created, they were prepared.
- 14 You were the anointed cherub that covers,  
 and I set you there;  
 you were upon the holy mountain of God;  
you walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.
- 15 You were perfect in your ways from the day  
 that you were created, until iniquity was found in you.
- 16 By the multitude of your merchandise,  
 you were filled with violence in your midst,  
 and you sinned;  
 therefore I have cast you as profane out of the mountain of God;  
 and I have destroyed you, O covering cherub,  
 from the midst of the stones of fire.
- 17 Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty;  
 you have corrupted your wisdom by reason of your brightness;  
 I cast you to the ground, I lay you before kings, that they may see you.
- 18 You have defiled your sanctuaries  
 by the multitude of your iniquities, by the iniquity of your trade;  
 therefore I have brought fire out from your midst;  
 it has devoured you, and I have turned you to ashes upon the Earth  
 in the sight of all those who see you.

19 All those who know you among the people  
are astonished at you; you are a terror,  
and you shall cease to be forever.

WEB words verse 14 differently:

You were the anointed cherub who covers.  
Then I set you up on the holy mountain of God.  
You have walked up and down in the middle of the stones of fire.

Many translations of verse 14 literally say that Satan was placed “on” the mountain, including the LXX. If this passage refers to some place in heaven, it would require actual mountains to exist there; and why would Satan be put on a particular mountain in heaven? To be set on a mountain seems to be saying, set on a planet.

It says, “*you walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.*” The Hebrew for “midst” is tâvek (8432) and means *middle, among*. The wording of the verses in question indicates that Satan was originally an angel in heaven, then he was put on a mountain; in other words, he became indwelt in a physical body and lived on a planet. Earth has a molten core that is 4000 degrees F, so it was likely the same for Mars and Rahab, making them stones of fire. Satan’s home planet is here called holy because all the beings on this planet worshiped the one true God, until Satan became Fallen.

Since Rahab was the 5<sup>th</sup> planet from the sun, it was the middle planet in this solar system (counting nine planets). The passage also tells us that Satan could easily travel between these planets. God destroyed Satan’s kingdom, his entire planet, and most life on it. Verse 17 says, “*I cast you to the ground.*” Satan survived the destruction of Rahab and fled to Earth.

Verse 18 says that Satan defiled his “sanctuaries by the multitude of your iniquities.” This suggests that they had many buildings that they used to worship God, but they became defiled because of Satan’s sins. How were Rahab and the defiled sanctuaries destroyed? God said, “*I have brought fire out from your midst, it has devoured you, and I have turned you to ashes upon the Earth*” (v. 18).

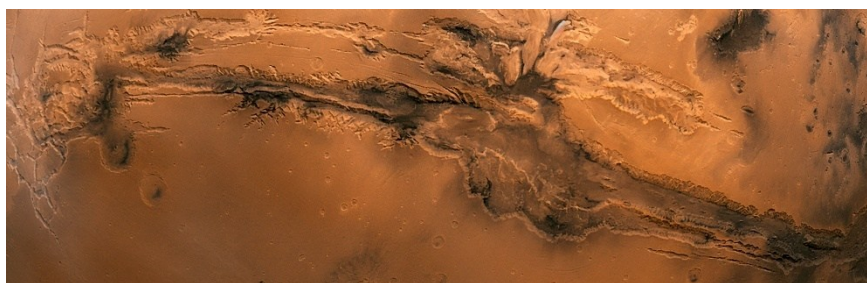
The words “*from your midst*” are two Hebrew words, (4480) that means *from* or *out of*, and (8432) tâvek, that means *to sever the center, between, half, middle*. Therefore, this is saying that from among his own reptilians, God caused those who refused to worship Satan to rise up and defeat him, and the planet was split apart. The word “earth” does

not refer to planet Earth, but the word merely means *land, field, ground*. Earth, Mars, and Rahab are all made of dirt and rocks, which is earth.

The LXX of that verse says:

. . . I made fire come from within you, and it consumed you. I reduced you to ashes on the ground in the eyes of all who saw you.

As you can see, there is a lot of Scriptural evidence. The force of Rahab's explosion and pieces of Rahab impacted Mars and severely damaged the southern region. Mars' outer crust shows a massive jagged edge, looking as though it was struck by a giant bolt of lightning. The scar titled, *Valles Marineris*, is over 2,500 miles long:



The war and the explosion of Rahab killed billions of reptilians on Rahab, Mars, and Earth. Although Earth was greatly damaged by the blast, unlike Mars, it was able to recover over millions of years. I will shortly present evidence of life on Earth over 200 million years ago.

Origen may have been the first to suggest that the king of Tyre was not merely a human king:

We are of opinion, therefore, that these words are spoken of a certain angel who had received the office of governing the nation of the Tyrians. (*Origen on First Principles*, chapter 5)

Later, Tertullian wrote:

This description, it is manifest, properly belongs to the transgression of the angel, and not to the prince's: for none among human beings was either born in the paradise of God, not even Adam himself, who was rather translated thither; nor placed with a cherub upon God's holy mountain, that is to say, in the heights of heaven, from which the Lord testifies that Satan fell; nor detained amongst the stones of fire, and the flashing rays of burning constellations, whence Satan was cast down like lightning. No, it is none else than the very author of sin who was denoted in the person of a sinful man. (Tertullian, "The Five Books against Marcion" in *The Ante-Nicene Fathers*, Volume III: Latin Christianity: Its Founder,

Tertullian, eds. Alexander Roberts, James Donaldson and A. Cleveland Coxe (Buffalo, NY: Christian Literature Company, 1885), 306.)

## The Ancient Exploded Planet

There are some ancient myths that may have encoded the tale of an exploded planet in this solar system. But how? Some researchers have speculated that either humanity is far older than we have previously believed, or the events transpired much later than believed, but I do not agree with either option. I believe the destruction happened millions of years ago, long before humanity existed.

Since science now believes there are at least 10 dimensions to the universe, I believe that one of those dimensions is *thought*. In short, experiments have proven that one person can pick up on the thoughts of another person, and some people have this ability to such an extent that they are considered psychic. I once thought it was just demonic, but people can learn to develop this ability, while others have it naturally.

I will give more on this later, but at this point it is sufficient to merely say that thoughts do not remain inside your brain; they apparently go into a thought realm. I call dimension the realm of *cosmic memory*.

This realm of cosmic memory would mean that billions of intelligent beings on a planet who died during its destruction would have many powerful thoughts concerning the horrific event. Even after people are dead, they are often still able to see their bodies and others around them, so they are still able to know what is happening as they go into their afterlife realm. Then, millions of years later, humans come along and connect to that realm of cosmic memory as they write their myths.

The book *Hamlet's Mill*, by De Santillana and Von Dechind, discusses the meaning of many ancient myths that portray wars among the gods, which could refer to war between planets in many ancient myths. Joseph P. Farrell, in his book *The Cosmic War*, summarized some of the myths found in *Hamlet's Mill* this way:

[F]or what the ancient myths are trying to say is not only that a planet exploded, but that the war was truly cosmic in nature, and affected all the celestial bodies of local space, including "Earth." In the Norse version, interestingly enough, this "end of the world" is brought about by sounding the apocalyptic trumpet, the Gjallarhorn, which has a "sound which reaches all the worlds." \* . . . (page 107) (\*1. De Santillana, *Hamlet's Mill*, page 156)

The trumpet's loud blast likely represents the sound of Rahab exploding that was heard throughout the solar system. Farrell went on to say:

Indeed, as De Santillana and Von Dechind observe, the Graeco-Roman cultural complex is full of references to a celestial catastrophe of such magnitude that even the "immovable joints of the universe" were shaken and the "very axle" running "through the middle of the revolving heavens" was "bent." [2] (Ibid, page 156) At the minimum, this last reference is nothing less than a statement that the angle of the Earth's axis of rotation relative to the ecliptic was altered in some drastic fashion. (Farrell, *The Cosmic War*, page 107.)

I believe this statement likely refers to the planets changing their locations relative to each other and the sun due to the explosion of Rahab. In the Babylonian myths, Tiamat might be Rahab:

In the pre-creation biblical version, it is Satan who is cast out of the heavens for daring to challenge God. In the garden, it is the serpent that is cast out. In Babylon, Marduk (their Hercules) defeats the dragon-serpent Tiamat, then casts her down and stands upon the carcass. (Ledo, Michael. *On Earth As It Is In Heaven*, page 5.)

The carcass of Tiamat could have been the largest chunk of Rahab. The author of the above quote references James B. Pritchard, ed., *The Ancient Near East, Vol. 1*, which speaks of the death of Tiamat:

"He (Marduk) released the arrow, it tore her belly, it cut through her insides, splitting the heart. Having thus subdued her, he extinguished her life. He cast down her carcass to stand upon it. After he had slain Tiamat, the leader, her band was shattered, her troupe broken up." (Princeton Univ. Press, 1973, p. 34. Quoted in, Ledo, *On Earth*, p. 6-7)

This creation myth goes on to say that after Tiamat (Rahab) was destroyed, the current atmosphere of Earth was created, and the moon was moved into its present location:

The lord rested; he gazed at the huge body, pondering how to use it, what to create from the dead carcass. He split it apart like a cockleshell; with the upper half he constructed the arc of sky . . . He gave the moon the luster of a jewel; he gave him all the night . . . when you rise on the world, six days your horns are crescent, until half-circle on the seventh, waxing still phase follows phase, you divide the month from full to full. (Ibid)

If the force of the blast from the destruction of Tiamat, when it hit Earth, moved the moon into its present position, is the moon a chunk

of Rahab? Earth must have sustained damage as well, and so it describes a new atmosphere, “*constructed the arc of the sky.*” This indicates that Earth sustained extensive destruction but was able to recover.

### **The Exploded Planet Theory**

Even science says that a planet could have exploded in this solar system. In the late 1700s, astronomers Johann Daniel Titius and Johann Bode developed the Exploded Planet Theory. Known now as the Titius-Bode Law, it uses complicated math to determine that a planet should exist between Mars and Jupiter. But the Exploded Planet Theory fell into disfavor early in the 19<sup>th</sup> century and was completely abandoned with the arrival of the theory of evolution; then, Canadian astronomer Michael Ovenden revived it in 1972. It was also championed by Tom Van Flandern, Ph.D., former chief astronomer of the U.S. Navy Observatory.

The Titus-Bode law hypothesized that a planet once existed between Mars and Jupiter, called Phaeton (Rahab), which had four or five moons, but it exploded and created the asteroid belt, which is between Mars and Jupiter. Phaeton was named after the son of the sun god Helios of Greek mythology, who attempted to drive his father’s chariot but got too close to the sun and was destroyed by Zeus.

One astronomer believed that the large asteroids we have found and named Ceres, Pallas, Juno, and Vesta were actually moons of Phaeton. I won’t go into all the research of the astronomers who developed the theory, but most scientists have accepted a simpler explanation: the asteroid belt merely tried to form into a planet but failed. However, with the advent of sophisticated computer simulations, scientists are again beginning to believe that there was a planet between Mars and Jupiter, but they believe it was a gas giant like Jupiter that got flung off somewhere “*out there.*” They will believe anything except evidence for catastrophism.

In an abstract titled, “*The challenge of the exploded planet hypothesis,*” Van Flandern provided a list of things that must be observed in order to prove the theory, and those things were observed.

The hypothesis of the explosion of a number of planets and moons of our Solar System during its 4.6-billion-year history is in excellent accord with all known observational constraints, even without adjustable parameters or ad hoc helper hypotheses. Many of its boldest predictions have been fulfilled. In most instances, these predictions were judged highly unlikely by the current standard models. . . . Mars is not an original planet,

but a former moon of an exploded planet. (c) As a major player in Solar System evolution, the exploded planet scenario must be considered as a likely propagation vehicle for the spread of biogenic organisms. (*International Journal of Astrobiology*, Volume 6, Issue 3, July 2007, pp. 185 - 197. Cambridge Univ. Press 2007. Published online by Cambridge University Press: 20 June 2007.)

Mars could have been a moon of a much larger Rahab. In his book, Van Flandern said:

Ovenden's dynamic calculations indicate that a massive planet, perhaps Saturn-sized, is missing from the gap between Mars and Jupiter, where the main belt of asteroids is found. (Van Flandern, *Dark Matter, Missing Planets, and New Comets*, page 227)

After postulating different theories about what might have caused the planet to explode, he said the explosion could have resulted "from the intervention of intelligent beings. In my opinion, [this] last possibility should not be dismissed out of hand" (Ibid, page 233).

Mac Tonnies said in *After the Martian Apocalypse: Extraterrestrial Artifacts and the Case for Mars Exploration*, that intelligent beings destroyed the planet:

I suggest that Van Flandern's *Exploded Planet Hypothesis* makes sense only if one is willing to entertain a nonnatural explanation.

Of course, this is heretical on several levels, as the explanation must somehow encompass the presence of potential artifacts on Mars as well as a presumed high-tech culture on Mars' erstwhile parent. (p. 47)

Does actual evidence exist of an interplanetary war that exploded Rahab and destroyed Mars? Yes, there are several different types of evidence.

Dr. John E. Brandenburg was a physicist at NASA during the Viking space probes of Mars, and the scientific findings were shocking. He said the analysis of the samples taken shows the presence of xenon 129 in the Northern Hemisphere at levels that are never found natu-



rally, and can result only from nuclear explosions. Additionally, there are high levels of uranium and thorium. The scientists involved calculated that--

The explosion would have been a planetary scale catastrophe. . . . the event occurred several million years ago and probably dates to the middle or late Amazonian epochs. Irradiation of lithologies in ETA79001 indicated a possible 180 million year or earlier age for the event. . . . [total energy released was] on the order of 1 Billion megatons of energy. These bombs, because of their high fission content, were very “dirty,” and would have induced radiation poisoning in any life on Mars that survived the original explosions. (John E. Brandenburg, *Evidence of massive thermonuclear explosions on Mars in the past, The Cydonian Hypothesis, and Fermi’s Paradox: new data*. Journal of Space Exploration, Oct. 14, 2015. Online pdf, p. 12. [www.mehtapress.com](http://www.mehtapress.com))

In a video on this subject, Brandenburg stated that the nuclear explosions happened 300 million years ago. Ice and other evidence have since been found, which supports the conclusion that Mars could have once contained an Earth-like biosphere, and thus also intelligent life on Mars.

Some researchers believe that a large thunderbolt-weapon could have caused the *Valles Marineris* scar. However, there is no certain way to know how long ago it happened; it may have been caused by massive electrical activity only 10,000-100,000 years ago (for more on this there are videos on YouTube about the book, *Thunderbolt of the Gods*, by David Talbot.)

It seems that when two planets get too close to each other, there is massive electrical activity, and this happened recently enough that it was witnessed by early humans who recorded it on cave walls all over the world, and even recorded in ancient tales of mythical gods at war with each other in the sky.

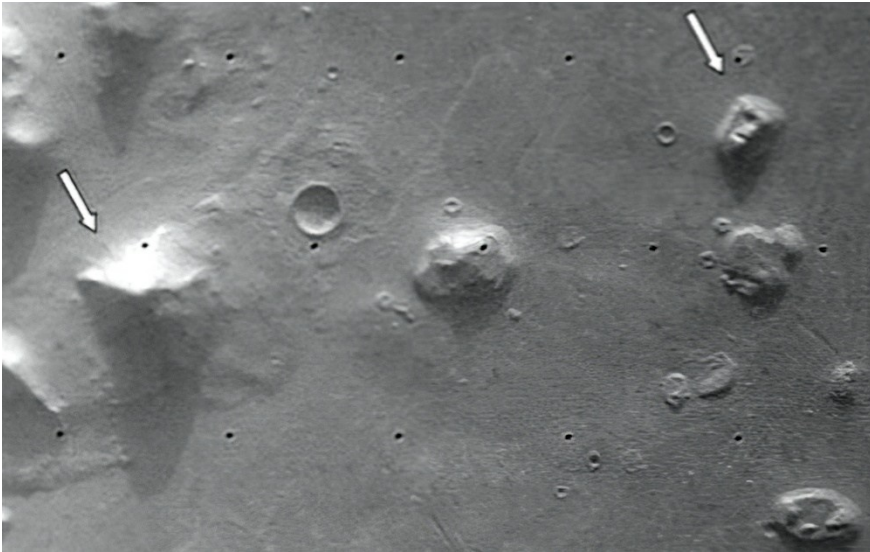
## Chapter 2

### Ancient Artifacts of Mars and Earth

*On Mars, the crumbling remains of ancient civilizations may be found, mutely testifying to the one-time glory of a dying world. -- P. E. Cleator (1936, one of the founders of the British Interplanetary Society)*

*The ruins of Cydonia are what remains of the city of angels who rebelled with Satan before the creation of Adam. -- David Flynn (Cydonia: The Secret Chronicles of Mars, p. 477)*

### The Face on Mars



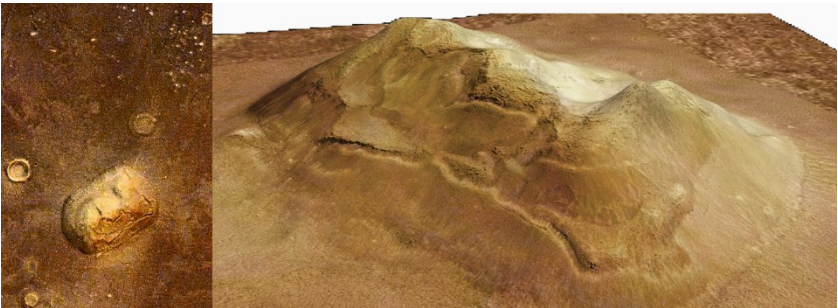
I was going to ignore the famous Face on Mars, first photographed by the Viking Orbiter in 1976, because two later photographs (1998 and 2001) did not show it. However, there are actually two original photos.

The one above has been widely published, and the second one was taken five days later. Notice that the pyramid has different shadows on it:



If you look closely, the face does not actually look human; it looks more ape-like, or is it reptilian?

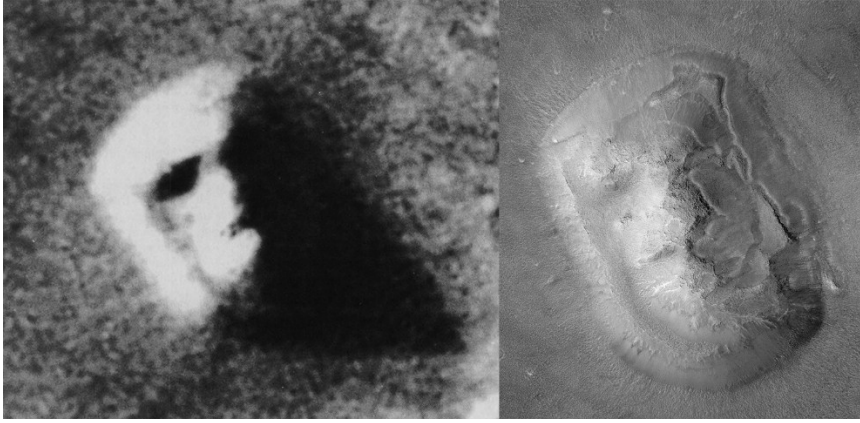
Another image (below) taken by Marlin Space Science Systems, Berlin orbiter barely shows a face, but another angle indicates that it is either not a real face, or has greatly eroded.



These two images were taken by European Space Agency (ESA).

However, could it have been made intentionally to look like a face only from a high altitude, and with the sun low on the horizon? Like the famous geoglyphs in Chile and Peru, commonly called the Nazca lines, which can only be seen from high altitudes.

Take a look at the long shadow in the left image below; there are no shadows in the right image:

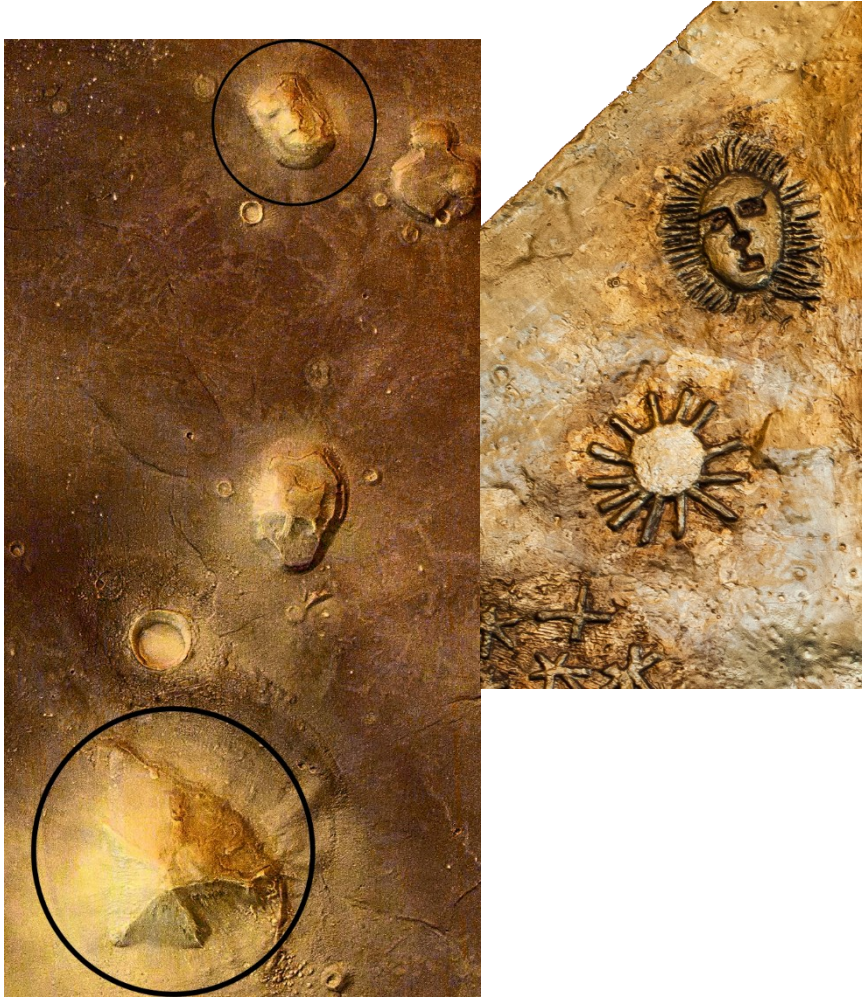


Look at this gold “Star Map” that was found in the Golden (Qorikancha) Temple near Cuzco, Peru, now in a museum.

After a careful examination, I do not believe this is a star map. Look at the upper left corner; you can see what looks very much like the Face on Mars:



Take a look at the object to the lower left of the face; could it be the multi-sided pyramid in the first Mars images?



I believe there is strong evidence that this gold artifact depicts the surface of Mars, especially the Cydonia area and beyond. In this case, the best place to find evidence of intelligent habitation would be farther south of the Face. (See image on next page:)

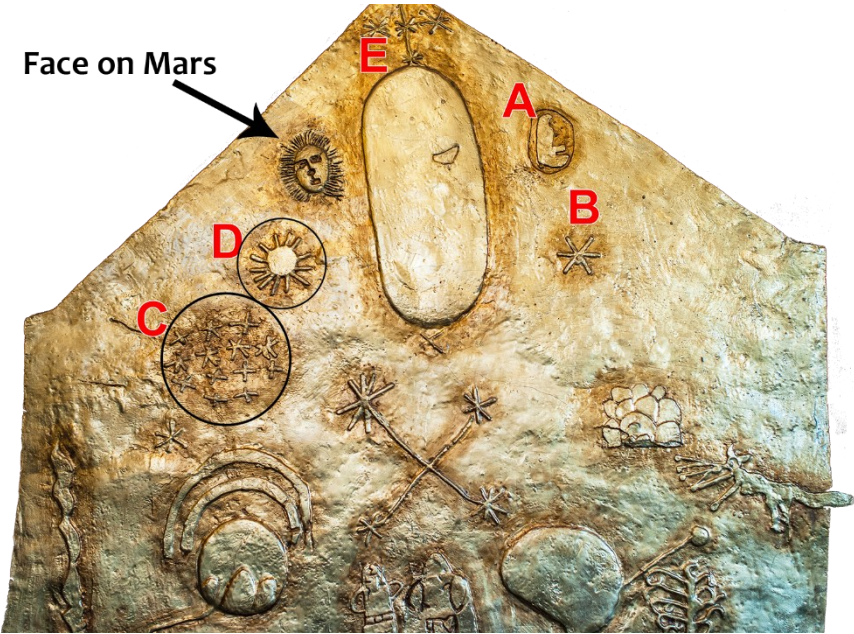
Now, why would a star map depict humanoid beings standing on it, along with crops and a wall? No, this is not a star map.

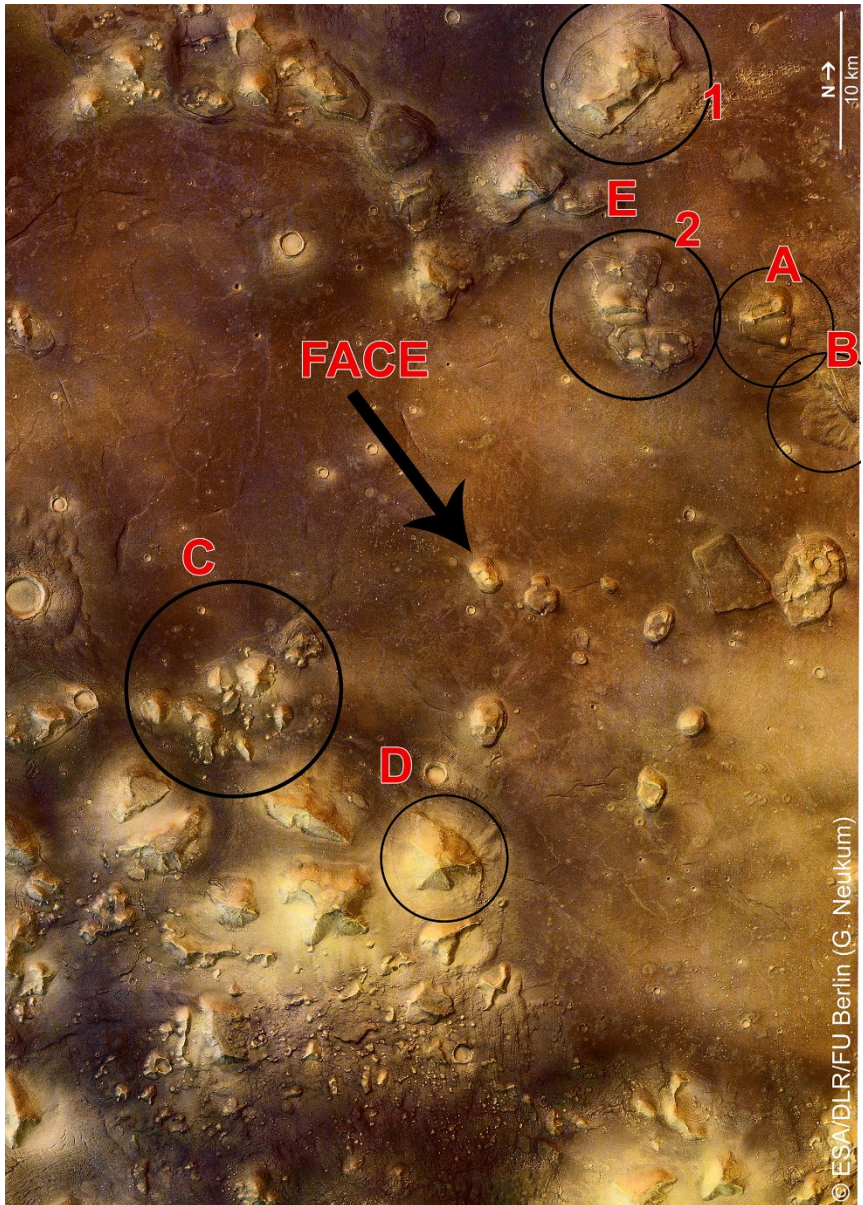
Consider how Earth’s ancient maps look; the sizes and shapes of islands and continents are often greatly distorted. Therefore, we cannot expect the comparable dimensions and distances on this gold map to be exactly as we find them on Mars.

Compare the surface of Mars with the Cuzco artifact:



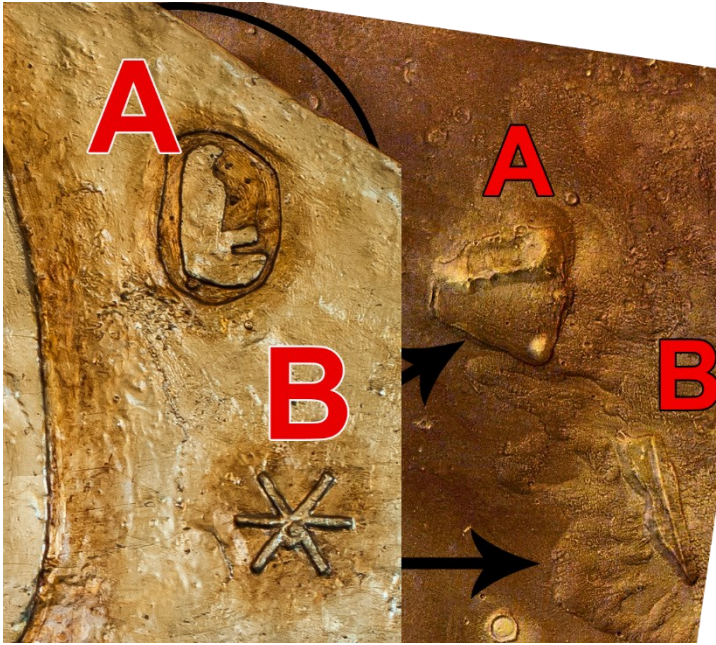
Face on Mars





There are two possible objects that could be E on the gold map, I have labeled them E-1, and E-2. Notice that A and B are just to the right of E-2.

The shape of A is very similar in both images, which is a distorted L shape, but is laid over on the Mars photo; and it is raised up on a base on both images. There is no circle on the Cuzco image under the A, that is part of the base.



The base of A is oval on the Cuzco Mars Map, but only partly round with a few rounded corners on the Mars image, as seen above.



The Cydonia region of the Face is in the northern hemisphere of Mars, and it also appears in the northern part of the gold Cuzco map. Notice also that the color of the Mars photo was not changed and shows two shades of color; a reddish color, and a gold color. On the Cuzco Mars Map, we also have reddish and gold. The Inca map could have been made of another metal, such as silver, but it was made of gold, which more closely matches the color of the Martian surface.

Notice that the Inca map appears to have been made from the perspective of someone who saw Mars from high up in the atmosphere. Since the Inca did not have a powerful telescope, it is very possible that

some aliens visited them who once lived on Mars. Then these aliens took one or two of the Incans on a UFO trip to Mars, where they are shown, “This is where we once lived, before it was destroyed in war.” Then someone made the gold object from memory. Could aliens be the reason that both the Inca and Aztecs had advanced mathematics and knowledge of the stars?

I believe that once more images of Mars are taken and fully examined, several other features on the gold Inca map will be discovered. The above information is more evidence which I add to the growing body of evidence that already exists about ancient civilization on Mars.

David Flynn in, *Cydonia: The Secret Chronicles of Mars*, gives us the etymology of the word Mexico:

The name Mexico has intriguing Martian associations. Mexico was derived from the word Mexitli, another name for the Aztec god of war, Huitzilopochtli. The suffix co signifies “place.” Mexico means literally “Place of the War God.” The god of war of Mexico was an aspect of the Roman god of war. (page 338)

In case you are not aware of it, Mars is the god of war. The quote, “Place of the War God” was referenced from Liddell-Scott-Jones Lexicon of Classical Greek, [www.perseus.tufts.edu](http://www.perseus.tufts.edu). I was unable to find that quote, but sites such as this are known to change or remove pages. I also could not find it in any PDF of the book, so I consulted Google’s AI, and received this answer:

According to one legend, the war deity and patron of the Mexica Huitzilopochtli possessed Mexitl or Mexi as a secret name. Mexico would then mean “Place of Mexi” or “Land of the War God.”

Rome and several other places believed they were founded by Mars, the god of war. Flynn pointed out that Dante identifies Mars with Satan in the Divine Comedy (Paradiso Canto IX: 127—142), in this translation by A. S. Kline:

Florence, the city founded by Mars, that Satan who first turned his back on his Maker, and from whose envy such great grief has come, . . .  
([www.poetryintranslation.com/PITBR/Italian/DantPar8to14.php](http://www.poetryintranslation.com/PITBR/Italian/DantPar8to14.php))

Since I always try to confirm a reference, I found that the other translations were very different; however, when I actually looked at what the translations said, they do agree:

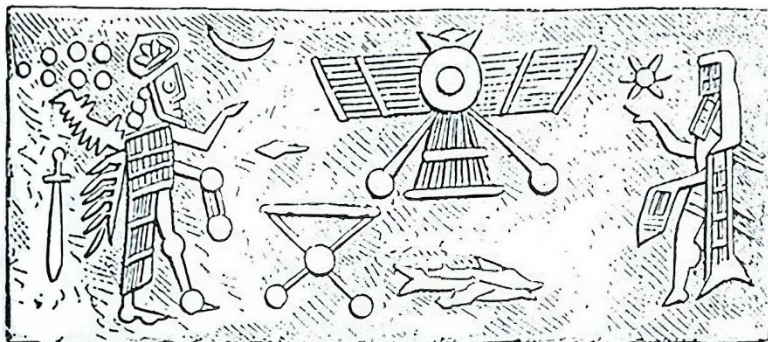
Thy city, which an offshoot is of him  
 Who first upon his Maker turned his back,  
 And whose ambition is so sorely wept . . .

(<https://divinacommedia.substack.com/p/dantes-paradiso-canto-ix>)

The city is Florence, which is believed to have been founded by Mars. It was Satan who first turned his back on his maker. This tells us that Florence was an offshoot of Satan, and was founded by Mars.

I believe it is highly probable that many reptilians survived the war on Mars, and continued to live there for several hundred years. But because of the damage done by the war, the arable land gradually grew too small for the population, so they left Mars. Perhaps they went to another star system, like Draco, and then later came to Earth millions of years later.

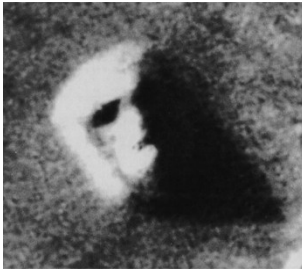
There is a Sumerian seal that appears to depict travel between Mars and Earth. Because of all the nonsense put out by Zecharia Sitchin, I was shocked that I actually agreed with his interpretation of this seal:



He and other authors have stated that the figure on the left is an Earthling because of the crescent moon and the seven circles, which represent Earth as the seventh planet from the outer edge of the solar system, counting Pluto as a planet. The figure on the right represents a resident of Mars, represented by the star-like object. The flying craft in the middle illustrates how they traveled from Mars to Earth, in an actual craft, not by thought or spirit. I do not believe that the wings on it are meant to represent literal wings on the craft but merely to indicate that it was a flying craft.

When I read on Sitchin's website that the figure represents Mars, I immediately thought to myself that it even resembles the Face on Mars;

then I read further, and Sitchin said a reader pointed out to him that the man looks like the Face on Mars, and he agreed. So, I guess I was not imagining it after all.



It appears that the Face on Mars is wearing some kind of head-dress, like the Egyptians.

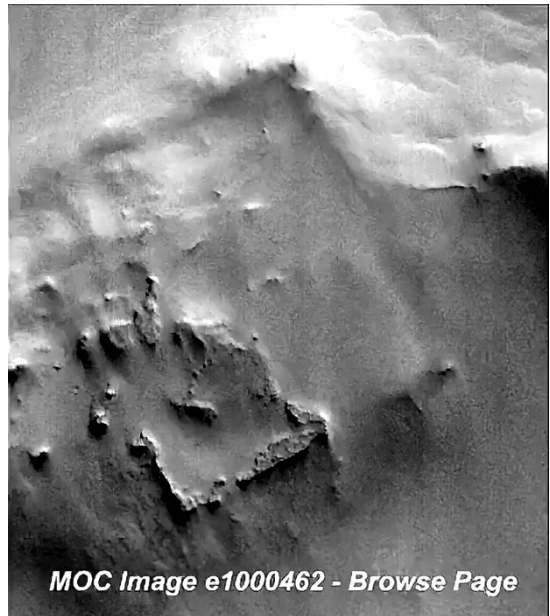
### Mars Artifacts

There are many images of the surface of Mars that appear to show evidence of previous occupation by intelligent life. Here is one taken by NASA's Global Mars Surveyor Mission:

<https://viewer.mars.asu.edu/>.

The only alteration made to this image is increasing the contrast to make the difference easier to see.

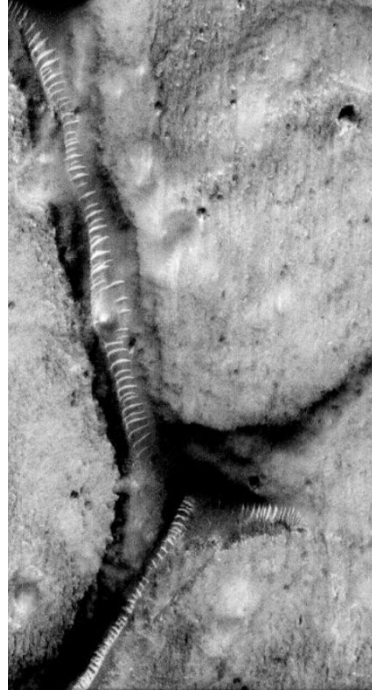
This NASA image appears to show ancient ruins of a wall or building, but the measure of one side is approximately 1.72 kilometers (.63 miles), suggesting that it was likely a walled village or compound. As far as photographic evidence is concerned, the only thing



that could be better than this photo is a photo of a machine or skeleton. The wall in the photo cannot have been made by anything other than intelligent life; therefore, this is strong evidence. Yet, it is shocking how easily it was dismissed by disbelievers.

Below is a photo of well-known tubes of some kind, which are estimated to be approximately 60 feet wide and miles long. The apparent light in the upper area is a reflection of sunlight, indicating that it is made of a clear substance like glass that must be extremely durable.

If this evidence does not convince you, I now include an actual femur bone of some kind of living creature, perhaps reptilian. I saw it online and confirmed that it is at [mars.nasa.gov](http://mars.nasa.gov), captured by the Curiosity rover. The bone is no doubt petrified:



([mars.nasa.gov/msl/images/Mars-fossil-thigh-femur-bone-like-Curiosity-rover-mastcam-0719MR0030550060402769E01\\_DXXX-full.jpg](http://mars.nasa.gov/msl/images/Mars-fossil-thigh-femur-bone-like-Curiosity-rover-mastcam-0719MR0030550060402769E01_DXXX-full.jpg))

and

<https://science.nasa.gov/resource/bone-up-on-mars-rock-shapes/>)

But NASA cannot believe their lyin eyes, therefore they claim it's merely a rock that happens to look like a femur bone.

People who are interested in the subject of out-of-place artifacts have already heard of the following items, but most reports claim these

objects are evidence of an advanced civilization here on Earth 100,000 or a million years ago; but I believe they are more likely from Mars or Rahab. (I do not provide references for the first few artifacts because they are well-known and appear in numerous books, websites, and videos.)

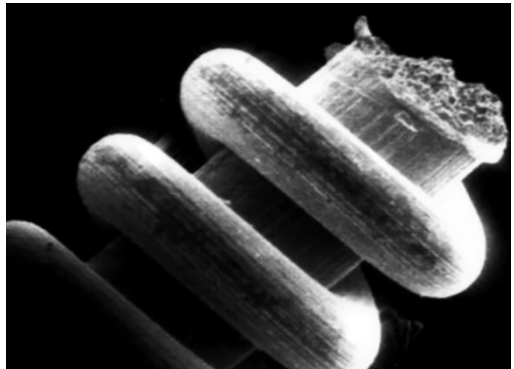
The Lanzhou Morning News, in China, reported on June 26, 2002, that a mysterious rock was found in a remote mountainous area with a threaded metal rod stuck into it. It was discovered by Mr. Zhilin Wang in the Marzong Mountain region of NW China on the borders of the Gansu and Xijiang provinces.



The mysterious stone is extremely hard and of a material unknown on Earth, and said to be millions of years old. Over 10 geologists and physicists from the National Land Resources Bureau of Gansu Province, Colored Metal Survey Bureau of Gansu Province, the Institute of Geology and Minerals Research of China Academy, Lanzhou Branch, and the School of Resources and Environment of Lanzhou College gathered to study the origin of the stone. The scientists declared it to be a very valuable stone of unknown origin.

This stone was likely blown out into space from Rahab or Mars. It could have landed on Earth at that time, or the rock could have been circulating through the solar system like many other rocks, until one day it landed on Earth a million years later.

In the early 1990s, some men were digging for gold deposits in the Ural Mountains of Russia and found a scattering of tiny metal coils and springs over 30 feet down, so small they were practically microscopic.



It was as if something crashed and scattered debris millions of years ago. The smallest pieces were tungsten, which is perhaps the strongest metal in existence. Those tiny pieces cannot be made by hand but require sophisticated machinery. This can only be ancient nanotechnology, shown highly magnified in the image.

Though this could be evidence of a reptilian civilization here on Earth millions of years ago, no evidence for any civilization was found near the objects; therefore, they were likely part of an object that broke apart when it was thrown into Earth's atmosphere from the destruction of Rahab.

### **Ancient Earth Artifacts**

Approximately 251.9 million years ago, Earth suffered a mass extinction event known by several different names, including the Permian-Triassic Extinction Event (PTME), or just the Great Dying. It was the most severe mass extinction in Earth's history and wiped out up to 95% of marine species and about 70% of terrestrial vertebrate species, drastically reshaping life on Earth. It was marked by massive earthquakes and volcanic activity, which may have been triggered by shockwaves from Rahab's explosion. There are some artifacts that indicate intelligent life on Earth before the Great Dying. Notice that this date falls within the timeframe mentioned by Dr. Brandenburg.

A bell-shaped object was found inside a large rock in Dorchester, Massachusetts, in 1852. An article written about the object appeared in the June 5, 1852 issue of Scientific American:

A few days ago a powerful blast was made in the rock at Meeting House Hill, in Dorchester, a few rods south of Rev. Mr. Hall's meeting house. This blast threw out an immense mass of rock, some of the pieces weighing several tons, and scattered small fragments in all directions. Among them was picked up a metallic vessel in two parts, rent asunder by the explosion. On putting the two parts together it formed a bell shaped vessel, 4 1/2 inches high, 6 1/2 inches at the base, 2 1/2 inches at the top, and about an eighth of an inch in thickness. . . . The inside is considerably corroded, but the outside is smooth and free from rust. . . . around the lower part of the vessel a vine, or wreath, inlaid also with silver. . . . This curious and unknown vessel was blown out of the solid pudding stone, 15 feet below the surface. . . . It has been examined by nearly 300 persons, many of whom were scientific men, but no-one has yet been able to say what it could have been made for. . . .

There is no doubt but that this curiosity was blown out of the rock as above stated . . . The matter is worthy of investigation, as there is no

deception in the case. (Crème, Michael. *The Hidden History of the Human Race*, page, 106-107)

This object was found in pudding stone that is supposedly over 600 million years old. But of course, science does not have the ages of things exactly correct. Now called the Dorchester Pot, the vessel has been described as a vase but resembles a candle holder.



Amateur geologist Mike Walters cut open a 200-million-year-old geode, and inside was a very hard metal ring, which appears to be made by the civilization that existed before humans. Walter said he had to cut around the metal because it was too hard to cut through (Coast-to-Coast AM):



Frank J. Kenwood of Sulphur Springs, AR, found an iron cup embedded inside a chunk of coal while he was working at his job in Oklahoma. He wrote an affidavit on Nov. 27, 1948:

"While I was working in the Municipal Electric Plant in Thomas, OK in 1912, I came upon a solid chunk of coal which was too large to use. I broke it with a sledge hammer. This iron pot fell from the center, leaving the impression or mold of the pot in the piece of coal. Jim Stall (an employee of the company) witnessed the breaking of the coal, and saw the pot fall out. I traced the source of the coal, and found that came from the

Wilburton, Oklahoma, Mines." ([www.genesispark.com/exhibits/evidence/paleontological/artifacts/pot/](http://www.genesispark.com/exhibits/evidence/paleontological/artifacts/pot/))



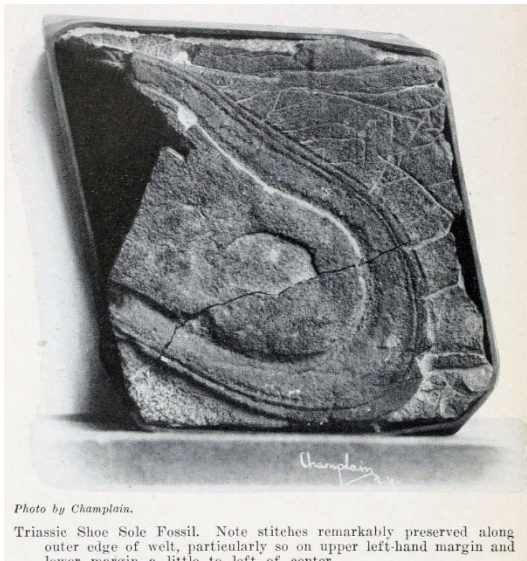
The pot was donated to a small museum in southern Missouri, but when its owner died, all of the museum's artifacts were sold off, but it is now located at the Creation Evidence Museum at Glen Rose, Texas.

An item such as this cannot have found its way hundreds of feet down in soil that turns into coal in a few short years. For that to happen would require massive amounts of pressure and heat, like from a huge asteroid impact. But whatever the cause, who would have used this pot in the middle of North America millions of years ago? Or even 12,000 years ago? I believe reptilians could have made it.

It is a huge mistake to claim that because you can make coal in a lab in a short time, it does not take long to form a coal mine in nature. You can also produce a diamond in a short time in a lab, but the idea that diamonds can form in nature in a short time is preposterous; neither can a coal mine. Perhaps a coal mine could form in a few years of high heat and compression, which only happens with massive cataclysms that would destroy all life on Earth, such as the Permian-Triassic extinction. Noah's Flood was a minor event compared to the Permian-Triassic Extinction.

How could a tree laying on top of the ground turn into quartz, and in some cases, opal, in only 5,000 years? It should take at least tens of thousands; science says millions.

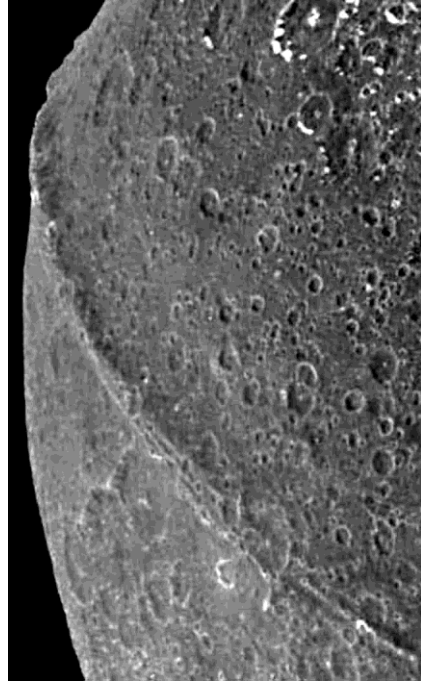
(Petrified Forest, Arizona. National Park Service)



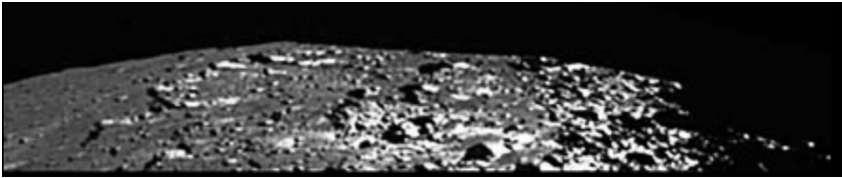
On January 15, 1917, an amateur geologist named Albert E. Knapp discovered a fossil while hiking Fisher Canyon, Nevada. After taking it home, he was astonished to see the imprint of a shoe heel. The heel print appears to have been worn on the right foot. The rock of the heel mark was Triassic limestone, approximately 225 million years old.

The rock's great age requires some type of civilization on Earth during that period, 200-250 million years ago. Young Earth Creationists claim the heel is evidence from Noah's Flood, while evolutionists discount it entirely by saying it is a natural formation.

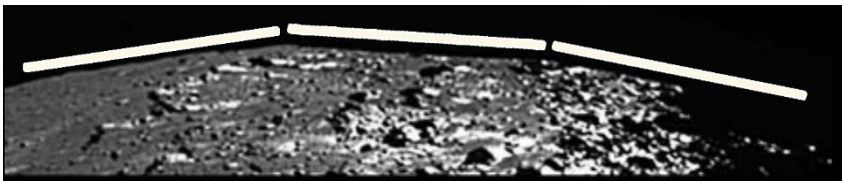
Sitting out in space, near the planet Saturn, is an object officially recognized as a moon called Iapetus. Look at the ridge around the center.



Now look at the other images of this object below:

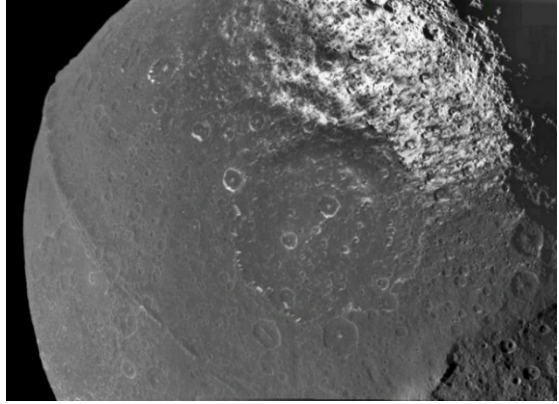


Do you notice anything? It doesn't actually look totally round.



Many researchers believe it could be an old derelict space station. It even resembles the Death Star of Star Wars (see next page):

Could Iapetus have been the vehicle that Satan was planning to use to conquer other worlds? It could have been blown into its present location when Rahab exploded. If this is the case, then the creator of Star Wars tapped into cosmic memory when he designed this “Death Star”—



Some people mistakenly suspect that a few spherical objects said to be 2.5-3 billion years old and found in a mine in South Africa, could represent this space station. Like a child's toy or model of the real thing.



I found one fellow who cut several of them in half with a saw. The best analysis indicates that they are naturally formed:



This was not made to represent a space station.

In 2008, a wheel was discovered deep inside a coal mine in Donetsk, Ukraine. It is believed to be 300-360 million years old:



([www.ancient-origins.net/unexplained-phenomena/ancient-wheel-0010997](http://www.ancient-origins.net/unexplained-phenomena/ancient-wheel-0010997))

Finally, Linda Moulton Howe reported in a 2025 episode of her Earthfiles YouTube channel that in 1999, she had a secret seven-hour meeting in Washington, DC, with an intelligence analyst working for the Defense Intelligence Agency and a World Bank analyst:

They detailed then, that at least three extraterrestrial civilizations have been waring with each other on Earth for at least 270 million years.

Some of those species fighting each other, opted to go deep underneath the bottoms of Earth's oceans and seas, into caverns that we don't even know are there.

Those were the taller Nordic blonde and blue-eyed ETs. Others were gray humanoids with large black eyes that chose to go inside and underneath big mountains. And then the reptilian species that look like standing up lizards or alligators that can shapeshift into humanoid form or complete invisibility, . . .

While other ET species went deep below Antarctica ice to build huge under ice bases that are still operational, as I understand it, in the 20th century, and maybe even today in 2025. (*Are E.T.s Building Deep Earth Housing for Human/Grey Hybrids?* Jul 30, 2025, Earthfiles)

But if this evidence does not fit your worldview, please, just ignore it and continue living in your world full of incomplete-truths.

Rahab was likely destroyed 200-300 million years ago; Earth was also destroyed; therefore, some of the reptilians either survived in another location, perhaps Draco where reptilians are sometimes said to be from, or traveled forward in time to when Earth had fully recovered.

If you have been able to accept the information presented thus far, then perhaps you can handle the next chapters with even deeper insights.

## Chapter 3

### Of Humanity and Angels

*"We have come from God, and inevitably the myths woven by us, though they contain error, will also reflect a splintered fragment of the true light, the eternal truth that is with God."-- J. R. R. Tolkien (essay *On Fairy-Stories*)*

In this chapter, I will present evidence to support my thesis that all humans are either Fallen or good angels. By that, I mean that our souls, on the inside, are angels before being joined to a human body. But because the Bible has very little direct teaching about angels, I need to dig deep. Even though there is a lot of evidence, I do have to make assumptions and speculations at times, just like theologians do! So stay with me as I present the evidence.

#### **Pre-Existence of the Soul**

Most theologians believe that God creates each human soul at the moment a woman becomes pregnant and that the soul does not pre-exist, but they are wrong. They refer to Genesis 2:7, where it says, "*The Lord God formed a man from the dust of the ground and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and the man became a living being.*" However, it does not require that the soul be created each time a pregnancy occurs. Does God create mankind anew every time a pregnancy takes place? No, nor does he create human souls repeatedly every day continuously, throughout human history. The passage merely states that the soul was placed into Adam at the time he was created. However, I believe that the pre-homo sapiens sapiens, also called early hominids, did not have angel spirits, but animal spirits. I believe the evidence indicates that Adam was the first hominid with an angel spirit. (More on this shortly.)

There are verses that indirectly suggest that we preexisted. This may explain why some theologians and philosophers, like Origen, be-

lieved in the soul's preexistence:

"Before I formed you in the womb I knew you; and before you were born I sanctified you" (Jer. 1:5)

Traditional theologians blithely reason away this verse, but it does appear to say that Jeremiah existed before he was born, not merely that God foreknew him. The Apostle Paul speaks of God knowing some of us before this life:

For those whom He foreknew, He predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, so that He might be the firstborn among many brothers. 30 And those whom He predestined, He also called; and those whom He called, He also justified; and those whom He justified, He also glorified. (Romans 8:29-30)

And again, in Ephesians he said:

. . . just as He chose us in Him before the foundation of the world, to be holy and blameless before Him in love; 5 He predestined us to adoption as sons to Himself through Jesus Christ according to the good pleasure of His will . . . (Eph. 1:4-5)

This verse does not say God "foreknew" us; that would be misunderstanding it. The passage clearly states he "*chose us*" before the world was created! How could we be known and chosen by God before the foundation of the world, unless we existed before the world? And by world, I mean from the time before humans.

And how are some people "predestined" to become Christians while others are not? That does not seem fair, but when you understand that some of us are good angels who came directly from heaven without rebelling against God, then it becomes understandable. A powerful verse is found in Revelation 17:

Those who dwell on the Earth whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world will marvel when they see the beast . . . (v8)

This verse refers to two groups of people. It states that there are people who were not in the Book of Life when the Genesis creation occurred, and there are people who were written in the book. Those people who were not written in the Book of Life at creation are those who Fell before creation. Therefore, we have here a reference to good angels and Fallen angels existing at the time the world was made. Theologians, of course, will wiggle around this clear and direct meaning.

A statement about humans preexisting is found in the Wisdom of Solomon, in the Apocrypha, which has always been in the Catholic Bible, but was left out of the Protestant Bible:

And I was a witty child, and had received a good soul. And whereas I was more good, I came to a body undefiled. (8-9-20) (Douay-Rheims)

Here are two recent translations:

As a child I was born to excellence, and a noble soul fell to my lot; or rather, I myself was noble, and I entered into an unblemished body; (NEB)

Now, I was a well-favored child, and I came by a noble nature; or rather, being noble, I attained an unblemished body. (NAB Revised Edition)

Though it does not say he was an angel, these verses make no sense unless we understand them to mean that he existed before he was born on Earth, and his nature was good; therefore, he was not a Fallen being.

There is a less certain passage in Psalm 90, yet it *may* support the thesis in this book. In the Hebrew language of the Old Testament, there were originally no vowels or punctuation. Vowel points and full punctuation were added in the Middle Ages by the Masoretes, which was not long ago (though some punctuation was added likely in the 2<sup>nd</sup> century BC). Now, given this information, I include Psalm 90:1-2, written by Moses, first without punctuation, then with punctuation:

Lord You have been our dwelling place in all generations before the mountains were brought forth or You had formed the Earth and the world even from everlasting to everlasting You are God.

Pay careful attention to the difference:

Lord, You have been our dwelling place in all generations. Before the mountains were brought forth, or You had formed the Earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting You are God.

Without punctuation, this passage says that we were dwelling with God “*before the mountains*” were formed. Which wording should we consider accurate? It is likely the punctuation was added based on what they thought it should say, in other words, preconceived opinions. Hebrews quotes Psalms 104:

“He makes His angels spirits, and His servants a flame of fire.” (Heb. 1:7)

The original Psalms:

who makes His angels as winds, His ministers a flaming fire. (104:4)

The literal Hebrew for “winds” is *rûach* and means *wind, breath, spirit*. The Greek equivalent is *pneuma* and means *air, breath, spirit, soul*. But since angels are spirits, that wording does not make good sense. You would not say, *He makes man humans*; or *He makes mankind flesh*. Man is already human and already flesh; that is what man is. So why would it say he makes angels spirits? Since angels do not have physical bodies, then they are spirits. Perhaps it is saying that *God makes angels into souls* (of people).

The *Acts of Paul*, an early Christian book not included in the Bible, gives us one of Paul’s sermons at the home of Onesiphorus:

And when Paul entered into the house of Onesiphorus, there was great joy, and bowing of knees and breaking of bread, and the word of God concerning abstinence (or continence) and the resurrection; for Paul said:

Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God.

Blessed are they that keep the flesh chaste, for they shall become the temple of God.

Blessed are they that abstain (or the continent), for unto them shall God speak.

Blessed are they that have renounced this world, for they shall be well-pleasing unto God.

Blessed are they that possess their wives as though they had them not, for they shall inherit God.

Blessed are they that have the fear of God, for they shall become angels of God. (*The Apocryphal New Testament*, M.R. James, 1924; eSword edition)

Next, the Early Church book called *Revelation of Saint John the Theologian* said:

And I heard a voice saying to me: Hear, righteous John. After that there is no pain, there is no grief, there is no groaning; there is no recollection of evils, there are no tears, there is no envy, there is no hatred of brethren . . . there are none of the cares of life, there is no pain from parents or children, there is no pain from gold, there are no wicked thoughts, there is no devil, there is no death, there is no night, but all is day. As I said before, And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold, that is, men who have been made like the angels through their excellent course of life; them also must I bring, and they will hear my voice, and there shall be one fold, one shepherd. (eSword)

Thus, you can see that there are passages of Scripture and other references that state or imply that we were all angels before being born on Earth, while other statements say we become angels. It appears that when we become humans, we become lower than the angels, but once we are born again of the Holy Spirit and return to heaven, then we are called sons of God again. And actually, because of what we have learned and experienced in our human lives, we rise to a higher level of being than the angels who have never lived on Earth.

### **Who are the Elohim?**

In the Hebrew Bible, the term *elohim* does NOT always refer to God, but can also refer to angels, especially when used in the plural. Kenneth A. Mathews said in his commentary on Genesis 3:4-5, where God said Adam and Eve ate forbidden fruit and have *become like one of us*:

The traditional rendering is “God,” but it can be taken as “gods” or “divine beings as the LXX rendering . . . This discussion is complicated by the identity of the plural (“us”) in v.22, where some contend that an angelic host is inferred. (footnote 177, page 186)

John Skinner, in his commentary on Genesis, said the sons of God, “*are everywhere in OT members (but probably inferior members) of the divine order, . . . angels*” (page 141). He then quotes from the *Cambridge Bible*:

“The angels are not called ‘sons of God’ as if they had actually derived their nature from Him as a child from its father; . . . The name Elohim or sons (i.e. members of the race) of the Elohim is a name given directly to angels . . . the name is given to God and angels in common; He is Elohim pre-eminently, they are Elohim in an inferior sense.” (Davidson, Job, *Camb. Bible*, p. 6). Skinner, p. 142)

How does one understand the divine council of Psalm 82?

God stands among the divine council; He renders judgment among the gods. “How long will you all judge unjustly and accept partiality of the wicked? Selah Defend the poor and fatherless; vindicate the afflicted and needy. . . .

I have said, “You are gods, sons of the Most High, all of you, but you all shall die like men, and fall like a man, O princes.” (Ps. 82:1-3, 6-7)

The word “gods” here is “elohim.” Who are these “gods”? How can there be other gods? Doesn’t the Bible say that Yahweh is the only God? Yes, but in this context, it means “*spirit being*,” because the word can also refer to demon spirits and angels. Dr. Michael Heiser explains

in *The Unseen Realm*: “angels—in fact all spirit beings—are elohim due to the nature of what that term in fact denotes” (page 30, note 4). And again later, he said:

All spiritual beings are, in biblical usage, labeled elohim. Terms like beney elim can either denote rank in the divine council (e.g., Job 1:6; 2:1; Psa 89:6, or, more generally, speaking of spiritual beings (Job 38:7; Psa 29:1). . . . Some beings are distinguished by role, such as messengers . . . (*Unseen Realm*, page 33, note 8)

Therefore, the correct translation of *elohim* depends upon its context and whether it is accompanied by singular or plural verbs or nouns:

The meaning of the verse is inescapable: The singular *elohim* of Israel presides over an assembly of *elohim*. A quick read of Psalm 82 informs us that God has called this council to judge the *elohim* for corrupt rule of the nations. Verse 6 of the psalm declares that these elohim are sons of God. (Heiser, *The Unseen Realm*, p. 27)

Heiser believed that the divine council is composed of Fallen angels who rule nations, but he is wrong, yet almost correct. It does appear that the divine council took place in heaven, but it is not referring to angels who were misruling over Earth. I believe it is just a way to let us know that human rulers are spiritual beings from heaven who must answer to God for how they govern, but the people they rule over are also originally from heaven before they fell.

Heiser almost made the connection but was never quite able to take that small step needed to realize that these *elohim* (spiritual beings) are angels in human bodies. This is why God condemned them for their misrule.

*John Gill's Exposition of the Entire Bible* says, of Psalm 82:

Many of the Jewish writers, by “gods”, understand “the angels”. The Targum paraphrases the words thus: “I said ye are accounted as angels, as the angels on high, all of you;” and to this sense some of their commentators interpret it. Jarchi’s gloss is, ye are gods; that is, angels; . . . the note of Aben Ezra is, “and the children of the Most High”: as angels; and the sense is, your soul is as the soul of angels; . . . as in Gen 3:5, but “ye are gods”; not like unto them only, but are in some sense gods; and besides, to say that they are like to angels, with respect to their souls, which come from above, is to say no more of the judges of the Earth, than what may be said of every man: . . . (commentary of John 10:34)

It is likely that John Gill did not fully grasp the implications of what he said and quoted from those ancient books and other commentators;

“ye are gods; that is, angels,” and, “your soul is as the soul of angels.” He was almost there, but he did not actually say that we humans are angels. Perhaps he believed it, but did not come right out and say it clearly.

*The Word Biblical Commentary*, by Gordon J. Wenham, says this about “let us make man in our image” in Gen. 1:

God is addressing his heavenly court, i.e., the angels (page 27).

Heiser said the divine council cannot be human, but in all his long examination of the subject, he ignores the end of verse 7 that says these *elohim* will “die like men.” There is only ONE way that divine spirit-beings can die like men, and that is for them to live as men! If God himself can live and die as a man, so can angels.

The above passage in Psalm is powerful evidence that all humans are angels. This passage also calls the divine council, “*sons of the Most High*,” which is just another way of saying, “*sons of God*.” When Jesus was accused of calling himself equal with God, though he said it in another place, in John 10 he defended himself by referring to Psalm 82:6:

Jesus answered them, “Is it not written in your law, ‘I said, “You are gods”’? 35 If He called them ‘gods,’ to whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken, 36 [why] do you say of Him, whom the Father has sanctified and sent into the world, ‘You blaspheme,’ because I said, ‘I am the Son of God’? (John 10:34-36)

Was Jesus one of the rulers of the land? Not in the earthly sense. The Sanhedrin would not have looked at Jesus and said, “*Okay, I can see how you are part of the divine council.*” Jesus knew that they would not see him as being part of any divine council. So why did he say it in his defense? Jesus understood this passage as referring to the *elohim*, as humans. Jesus knew that they only saw him as a common man; therefore, Jesus was connecting this passage with everyone on Earth. We are all *elohim*, which are spirit beings, or sons of God, who are angels.

*Barnes Notes on the Bible* said of Ps. 82:6:

This was said of magistrates on account of the dignity and honor of their office, and it shows that the Hebrew word translated “god,” *אלהים* *elohim*, in that place might be applied to man. Such a use of the word is, however, rare.

Wow, he also came very close. We are not literally sons of God in the same sense as offspring, but in the sense that God created us to be eternal spirit beings, so we are his spiritual family, and he claims us as

his children. In Acts 17, the Apostle Paul said, “*As some of your own poets have said, ‘We are His offspring.’*”

Technically speaking, the word “angel” is a job description that means “messenger.” Some sons of God function as messengers, while others do not. However, for lack of a better term, I will continue to refer to us sons of God as angels.

On Gen. 5:1, the Targum of Onkelos states, “*In the day that the Lord God created man, in the resemblance of Elohim He made him*” (Etheridge, p. 44). The footnote says that the Samaritan Version uses “angels” instead of “Elohim.” Take note of this; how was this changed? Was “angels” in the original? Or did someone choose to use “angels” instead of *Elohim*, because that is what it actually means?

This sort of thing has happened several times in the process of translating the Bible; instead of just a literal translation, the translators may use a word that reflects their interpretation.

Psalm 8 is a prophecy about Jesus:

what is man that You are mindful of him, and the son of man that You attend to him? For You have made him a little lower than the angels . . . (Psalm 8:4-5)

Here are two literal translations:

For You have made him lack a little from God . . . (LIT)

And causest him to lack a little of Godhead . . . (YLT)

The Hebrew says “*elohiym*” which is the plural form of *elohim*. This is why several translations say *angels*. The LEB, NET, and ESV say, “*divine beings*.” The writer of Hebrews referred back to the above passage when he spoke about Jesus in this verse:

But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels to suffer death, crowned with glory and honor, so that He, by the grace of God, should experience death for everyone. (Hebrews 2:9)

Therefore, I believe that we also become lower than angels when we are born as humans; we lose something when we become human, but we regain it when we make it back to heaven.

The evidence is increasing that the Bible supports the idea that humankind are angels. However, there is still more evidence. In the book of Revelation, John falls down to worship at the feet of the angel who showed him the visions, but the angel tells him:

"See that you not do that. For I am your fellow servant, and of your brothers the prophets, and of those who keep the words of this book. Worship God!" (Rev. 22:9)

In this verse the angel says that he is on the SAME LEVEL as John and all the other prophets of God of the Old Testament. He is neither higher nor lower than humans; he is simply a servant of God. As such, he was likely a low-ranking angel, not an archangel.

Another significant verse is Psalm 97:7:

All who serve graven images are ashamed,  
who boast in worthless idols;  
worship Him, all you gods.

The Hebrew for "gods" is *elohim*, but it is translated "angels" in the LXX, "*worship him, all ye his angels.*" Another verse from the LXX is Deu. 32:43:

Rejoice, ye heavens, with him, and let all the angels of God worship him; rejoice ye Gentiles, with his people, and let all the sons of God strengthen themselves in him; for he will avenge the blood of his sons, and he will render vengeance, and recompense justice to his enemies, and will reward them that hate him; and the Lord shall purge the land of his people.

Notice that the wording of this passage implies that the angels are the sons of God, and that God will avenge their blood. What? How can angels spill blood? There is only one way; they are human! It was quoted almost exactly by Paul in Hebrews 1:6, and later by Justin Martyr.

### **Who are The Sons of God?**

We have already seen that the *sons of God* are angels, so it is surprising that some Christians claim the *sons of God* are not angels when the Bible directly refers to them as angels in several places. A well-known reference is found in Job:

Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and the Adversary also came among them. (Job 1:6)

This event occurred long after the Fall of Satan and his angels, and even after God made Satan the god of this world and the prince of the power of the air (which refers to the spirit world). Although it is not clearly stated, this passage infers that Satan is one of those sons of God. The Book of Enoch said:

And it came to pass when the children of men had multiplied that in those days were born to them beautiful and fair daughters. 2 And the angels,

the sons of heaven, saw and lusted after them . . . (1 Enoch 6:1-2) (Lumpkin translation)

This clearly states that the sons of heaven who mated with the daughters of men are angels. In the ancient book of Jubilees, the author wrote:

When the children of men began to multiply on the face of the Earth and daughters were born to them, the angels of God observed their beauty during a certain year of this jubilee. They took wives from among them, choosing any they desired, and bore sons who became giants. (chapter 5)

Josephus said the sons of God who mated with humans were angels:

For many angels of God accompanied with women, and begat sons that proved unjust, and despisers of all that was good, on account of the confidence they had in their own strength; for the tradition is, that these men did what resembled the acts of those whom the Grecians call giants. (*Antiquities of the Jews*; Book I, chapter 3)

Wayne Grudem, in *Systematic Theology*, said the *sons of God* are angels (page 397). Rev. V.S.S. Coles, of Oxford, said:

It is to be noted that before they were angels, that is messengers, they were sons of God. . . . They are the 'sons of God' who, when He laid the foundations of the Earth, 'shouted for joy'; perhaps indeed they are also the morning-stars which sang together [book of Job]. (*A Book of Angels*, Longmans, page 49)

Like Heiser and others, he could almost see humans as angels but did not actually make that connection. John Drummond wrote:

In the biblical texts, the "sons of God" are usually described as lesser heavenly beings in the service of the Most High. In the texts of the cultures that surrounded Israel, like the Canaanite literature found at Ugarit, the "sons of God" similarly appear as divine beings in the service to the king of the gods, El, and his queen, Asherah. They include the likes of Baal, Anath, Astarte, Yam, and Mot. The audience of Genesis would have definitely understood these so-called "fallen ones" to be the offspring of celestial beings and human women. (*The Nephilim and the Sons of God*, May 21, 2024, BiblicalArchaeology.org)

You may ask, how can we call angels sons of God and spirits of God if they are merely created beings? It is likely that they have a spark of the Holy Spirit inside them, the same as born-again Christians. If

born-again humans can be called sons of God and heirs with Christ, then angels can also be called sons of God.

### **Sons of the Evil One**

Several interpretations have been proposed for the meaning of “*sons of God*.” Until the third century, the most dominant meaning was *angels*. About the passage in Job, Vladimir Moss wrote in *The Theology of Eros*:

[E]ven without absolute unanimity concerning which reading is correct, there is complete unanimity, from the earliest Jewish commentators until the early third century, about its meaning. All commentators and writers agree that the reference here is to angels. Such an interpretation is supported by the fact that in three passages of the Book of Job (1.6, 2.1, 38.7) the phrase “sons of God” certainly refers to angels. Also, the fact that the women gave birth to giants (cf. Baruch 3.26-28; Sirach 16.7; Wisdom 14.6; Judith 16.7) suggests the result of something that was not just a normal human coupling....

We find this interpretation both in pre-Christian Jewish literature - for example, The Book of Enoch, Jubilees, The Testament of the 12 Patriarchs, Philo and Josephus - and in the early Christian Fathers and writers . . . (page 102)

He goes on to report that the later Fathers all turned away from that interpretation:

Thus St. John Chrysostom writes that it would be “folly to accept such insane blasphemy, saying that an incorporeal and spiritual nature could have united itself to human bodies”. (page 104)

Here we see that the ECFs were well able to understand that a spirit cannot mate with a human, so they decided it must mean that the sons of Seth mated with the daughters of Cain, but they could not see that it was actually speaking about physical beings who were angels on the inside.

Taking it to the next level, there are intelligent beings from other planets who are also angel-spirits on the inside. Therefore, when the passages in Genesis 6 and Enoch say that angels had children with Earth women, they refer to these beings from another planet.

When the Church Fathers turned away from viewing the Sons of God as angels, they created a new theory that claims the Sons of God as the righteous offspring of Seth, and the offspring of Cain are the daughters of men; this is called the Sethite Theory. However, the mixing of Sethites and Cainites would have meant nothing; both were fully human. So to make it work, they decided that Cain must be the off-

spring of the Serpent and Eve; thus making Cain a Nephilim. This is terrible Scripture twisting. The text clearly states that Adam knew his wife Eve, and she gave birth to Cain, so he was NOT the offspring of the serpent. Furthermore, after giving birth, Eve declared, "*I have gotten a man from the Lord*" (KJV). Some modern translations say, "*with the help of the Lord.*" The LXX says, "*gained a man through God.*"

Most knowledgeable Bible scholars today do NOT believe in the Sethite Theory because there is no biblical support for it. Among those who were against the Sethite Theory include: Merrill F. Unger, Clarence Larkin, Hal Lindsey, Chuck Smith, Derek Prince, Chuck Missler, and many more.

Dr. Michael Heiser, in *Reversing Hermon*, destroyed five points of this theory; then he said:

There are more deficiencies in this viewpoint than I will take time here to expose, but the point is evident. The Sethite hypothesis collapses under the weight of its own incoherence. (page 11)

Supposedly, all people on Earth are either the offspring of Seth or the offspring of Cain, but this is not supported by any Bible verse.

Those who claim Cain was a Nephilim use the passage in 1 John for support:

We should love one another, not like Cain, who was of the wicked one and murdered his brother. And why did he murder him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's works were righteous. (1 John 3:11-12)

But Cain was born after the Fall; therefore, the soul/spirit in Cain was a Fallen angel, while the spirit in Abel was likely a good angel. Even though most people born after the Fall are Fallen angels, good angels are also being born. God said that the offspring of Satan (Fallen angels who are now being born here on Earth) will hate the offspring of Eve (good angels). And that is what we have seen played out on Earth throughout the centuries: evil people hate good people:

"I'll place hostility between you and the woman, between your offspring and her offspring. He'll strike you on the head, and you'll strike him on the heel." (Gen. 3:15) (ISV)

Jesus spoke to some Pharisees and told them that God was not their father, but the devil:

"You are doing the works of your own father." They said to him, "We are not illegitimate children," they protested. "The only Father we have is God himself."

Jesus said to them, "If God were your Father, you would love me, for I have come here from God. I have not come on my own; God sent me. 43 Why is my language not clear to you? Because you are unable to hear what I say. 44 You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desires. He was a murderer from the beginning, not holding to the truth, for there is no truth in him. . . ." (John 8:41-44)

How could the Pharisees be sons of Seth, since they were full-blood Jews? They could not be from an entirely different lineage than many of the other Jews, because after literally thousands of years of intermarrying, there is no way that there could be two completely separate lines of Jews living side by side, one being from the line of Cain and one from the line of Seth. That belief is absurd; they all intermarried, so that could not happen.

I realize that if you are a follower of a certain teacher, then you are considered his son, so it is easy to see Jesus as saying that the Pharisees were merely followers of Satan, but the passage seems to be very direct; therefore, I believe there is more to it in this case. I believe that Jesus was saying that those Pharisees were Fallen angels. And he may have even been saying much more; he may have been saying that they were the literal spiritual offspring of Satan when they were reptilians. Satan could have had millions of reptilian offspring who were killed in the explosion of Rahab. Therefore, some of them could be alive today as humans.

According to official Christian theology, since the Holy Spirit had not yet been given to the Church and no one had yet become born-again, all the Apostles should been Fallen. However, James and John wanted to call down fire to kill some people who did not welcome Jesus into their village, but Jesus rebuked them and said:

"You do not know what kind of spirit you are of. 56 For the Son of Man did not come to destroy men's lives but to save them." (Luke 9:55-56)

(Note: This entire verse was intentionally removed from a Greek manuscript of the New Testament created by Westcott and Hort. Most modern translations of the Bible are based on this corrupted manuscript. The complete explanation is found in *Editing God: Textual Criticism and Modern Bibles Analyzed*, Fortner. The MEV trs. used as the main

text in this book is not based on the corrupted Westcott and Hort text, but on the same text used for the KJV.)

Notice he said that James and John did not realize what spirit they were “of” -- inferring that they were of God, not of Satan, like the Pharisees. But, according to Christian theology, all human spirits are the very same until they are born-again. This tells me that James and John were good angels, but they still needed to be born-again by the Holy Spirit in order to rise back to heaven and become full Sons of God once more. The Apostles must have eventually understood this because the Apostle John said that Cain, “*was of the wicked one*” (v.11-12). John did not say that Cain was a physical offspring of Satan, but a fallen angel.

(Just because Cain is not mentioned in the genealogy does not matter; the entire tribe of Dan is missing in the listing of tribes in Revelation 12. Those listed were given for specific reasons, both in Revelation and in Genesis.)

Finally, we are expected to believe that Jesus was the offspring of a Fallen woman! NO, HE WAS NOT! Mary was not Fallen, of that I am certain.

Humans being Fallen or good angels explains why some people are very evil from birth and why some people are good from birth. 2 Peter 2:8 says that Lot lived in a wicked city, and it tormented his “*righteous soul*.” How could he have a righteous soul if he was Fallen? This indicates that he was a good angel.

Christians have read the next verses many times without realizing exactly what they say. Now that you have read this far into this book, when you read these verses again, you might see them differently:

“The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field. But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat and went away.” (Matthew 13:24-25)

This is a parable of the end times, but notice that it begins at the very beginning before the aliens showed up and caused the Fall. The field is the whole world; therefore, this parable says that originally, there were only good angels living on Earth, then Satan came and planted his Fallen ones here among the good (because of the Fall). To make the point, Jesus again said:

“He who sows the good seed is the Son of Man, 38 the field is the world, and the good seed are the sons of the kingdom. But the weeds are the sons of the evil one. 39 The enemy who sowed them is the devil, the

harvest is the end of the world, and the reapers are the angels. (Matthew 13:37-39)

How could there be any “*good seed*” if we all have the same Fallen condition at birth? Jesus clearly stated that some of us are good seed and some of us are evil seed. Jesus said in Matthew 13:

24 He told them another parable, saying, “The kingdom of heaven is like a man who sowed good seed in his field. 25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed weeds among the wheat and went away. 26 But when the shoots had sprung up and produced fruit, the weeds also appeared.

Matt. 13 directly states that Satan is sowing weeds among the wheat here on Earth; how could this be the case if we are all weeds at birth? Therefore, the weeds can only be Fallen angels, and the wheat are the good angels. How could it refer merely to people who choose to follow evil? Since some people are born weeds and some wheat, then this tells us Satan can and does cause evil angels to be born on Earth. After all, that is part of God’s plan; they must be born here in order to be reclaimed to God’s family.

And I would even take it a step further; consider the more than 8 billion people on Earth right now, not to mention the billions who are dead and those not yet born; why would God have made so many billions of angels? Supposedly, angels do not reproduce, but the theologians do not know this; they are speculating without evidence. With such a vast number of people, it seems to me that angels must reproduce, and they would need to reproduce in order to supply the spirits inside of all the intelligent beings in the entire universe. And with the clear statements made by Jesus calling some people “*sons of the evil one*,” perhaps Satan has some literal spiritual sons alive today.

### **More Human-Angel Evidence**

In Luke 20, some Pharisees questioned Jesus about having a wife in heaven:

Jesus answered them, “The sons of this age marry and are given in marriage. 35 But those who are counted worthy to attain that age, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage. 36 For they cannot die any more, for they are equal to the angels and are the sons of God, being sons of the resurrection. (vs. 34-36)

The words “*equal to the angels*” is only one word in the Greek, ἰσάγγελος (isaggelos) (2465) in Strong’s number system. There is very

little in Bible reference books concerning this word. Strong says, “*like an angel, that is, angelic: - equal unto the angels.*” Even the *Complete Word Study Dictionary* (CWD) does not say much about it:

from isos (2470), similar or equal, and aggelos (32) angel. Angel-like (Luke 20:36, which, if taken in connection with Mark 12:25, would be better translated “like” instead of “equal” {see Matt. 22:30}.

Here are a few other translations:

for they are as the angels, and are the children of God . . . (Murdock)

for they are equals of angels; and are God’s sons . . . (NENT)

they are like angels and are sons of God . . . (TLV)

We have *like angels*, *equal to angels*, and *angelic*. This does not actually say we become angels again, but notice that Jesus then stated that they are “*sons of God*,” which, in the Old Testament refers to angels. Though Jesus did not have a formal religious education, it is clear from his many references to the Law and the Prophets that he had read and understood them. He likely had many conversations with educated men, if not actual teachers, so he knew that the phrase “*sons of God*” means angels. Jesus also said:

Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called the sons of God.  
(Matt. 5:9)

In other words, the peacemakers will go to heaven and become angels. We see that at least twice Jesus indirectly said that when people go to heaven, they become angels. However, was he actually saying in these passages that we return to being angels again?

According to 1 Enoch, “*men were created exactly like the angels*” (69:11, Lumpkin). To me, this is saying that we are angels. How can we be exactly like angels, yet not be angels?

In the parable of the sheep and goats, Jesus said that when he returns, he will gather all nations and judge them; to those who are sheep, he will say:

“Come, you blessed of My Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you since the foundation of the world.” (Matthew 25:34)

But to the goats he will say:

“Depart from Me, you cursed, into the eternal fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.” (vs. 41)

Notice the wording; he will be speaking to people, and said they will enter the kingdom “*prepared for you.*” But to a different group of people, he said they will enter hell, “*prepared for the devil and his angels.*”

He did not say, “*you will go there even though it was prepared for someone else,*” nor did he say, “*you will join the devil and his angels.*” I believe he was suggesting that those who go there are the devil’s angels; those who were followers of Satan in the former age and did not repent while on Earth. He could have just as easily said, “*prepared for you,*” but with this statement, he revealed their true spiritual identity.

Are we to believe that God prepared the Kingdom for the righteous but did not prepare a place for the wicked, so God had to send them to join the devil and his angels? No, they are one and the same! They go there because it was prepared for them.

I believe that most good angels are not born in countries with few Christians, because there is only a small chance of them hearing and accepting the Gospel. God makes sure that they hear the Gospel repeatedly so that they are saved. As such, I believe few, if any, who come from heaven will end up in hell.

Some Early Church Fathers literally believed that Jesus was an actual angel, and so the Roman Catholic Church declared this belief anathema in 553 AD by the *Fifth Ecumenical Council*. There is evidence that they also believed that humans are angels, Fallen and good. In Justin Martyr’s *Dialogue with Trypho*, he said:

I shall give you evidence from Isaiah himself; for he affirms that evil angels have dwelt and do dwell in Tanis [in Egypt]. . . “For the shadow of Pharaoh shall be a disgrace to you, and a reproach to those who trust in the Egyptians; for the princes in Tanis are evil angels.” (Isa. 30:3-4) (Chp. LXXIX, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers*, Vol. 1, 1903)

Justin quotes Isaiah 30 of the Septuagint. The only English translation of the LXX I have is the *Brenton* translation, which says, “*For there are princes in Tanes, evil messengers.*” This suggests that the rulers of Egypt were indwelt by Fallen angels. And if the rulers were Fallen angels, so were the people, unless the rulers were Nephilim who descended from the Watchers, which is very possible.

There are actual carvings and statues that show some rulers of Egypt with elongated skulls, such as Akhenaten and his daughter, Nefertiti. Elongated skulls have been connected to hybrids. Some skulls of giants are elongated, but most are not.

Even though there is no doubt that there are people with Nephilim DNA in them on Earth today, being sons of the evil one refers to the spirit and not the flesh. However, some of the aliens that are here now creating half-human and half-alien hybrids may not possess Fallen angel spirits but mere animal spirits.



I am not the only person who teaches that humans are Fallen and good angels; Charles DeLoach teaches it in his book, *The Angels' War Against God*. However, this is about the only point I agree with him on, because he accepts the position of the Early Church Fathers, who believed that Jesus was not only the Son of God but also an actual angel. Even though I disagree with him on a lot, I have used a few of his supporting references.

### **The Jewish View of Humans and Angels**

If the only passages I had to support my thesis were those mentioned above, I would have more evidence than exists for many accepted doctrines, but there are still more passages, both inside and outside the Bible. For example, Deut. 32:8-9 says:

When the Most High gave the nations their inheritance, when He separated the sons of man, He set the boundaries of the peoples according to the number of the children of Israel.

James C. Vanderkam, in *The Dead Sea Scrolls Today*, said the wording of this verse was likely changed because it's different in the Septuagint and Dead Sea Scrolls:

. . . most Greek manuscripts have "angels of God" and a few read "sons of God." 4QDeut preserves the reading "sons of God." . . . recent translators have recognized, the reading of the Septuagint, now supported by a Qumran copy of Deuteronomy, is preferable, since it is easier to explain why someone might change "sons of God" (a theologically suspect phrase) to "sons of Israel" than it would be to account for the reverse. (Vanderkam, page 164)

As a result, some modern translations, like the ESV, NEV, and others, do say, "*sons of God*." The LXX here says; "*he set the bounds of the nations according to the number of the angels of God*." Dr. Heiser said, "'sons of God' is the correct reading, as is now known from the Dead Sea Scrolls" (*The Unseen Realm*, page 113). And we know that "*sons of God*," are angels.

The evidence of this verse is powerful in its implications, as it specifically states that the nations of the world are made up of angels; though it does not mention that they are mostly Fallen angels, because the Jews do not believe in the Fall of man in the Garden.

It seems to me that the deeper we go into the Scriptures, the harder it is to separate people from angels. Angels are simply people who have not yet lived on Earth. People are merely angels who were in heaven at one time; though most of them are now Fallen.

Finally, I researched what Philo of Alexandria believed about angels and came across a dissertation by Eric Raymond Naizer titled, *Adam, Humanity, and Angels: Early Jewish Conceptions of the Elect and Humankind Based on Genesis 1-3*. Here are a few quotes:

The Qumran text primarily associates Adam with the elect rather than humankind in general, but also understands the dual biblical descriptions of Adam as conveying two opposed kinds of humans—[one group] associated with the angels and the elect while the [other group] is linked to the non-elect and human mortality. (p. 8)

[The elect] are formed in the “likeness of the angels” not only means that there is similarity between these people and the angels, it also implies that Adam was fashioned like the angels. (p. 37)

The Rule of Benedictions also claims that the elect have been placed among the lot of the angels (1QSb 4:26). (p. 54) (Florida State University Digital Library, Graduate School, 2013)

God did not allow graven images to represent Him; however, most students of the Bible are unaware that God *allowed images of angels* and even commanded them in the Bible. Cherubim were depicted on the walls of the Temple in Jerusalem (2 Chron. 3), and two were on the Ark of the Covenant:



One representation of the Ark of the Covenant.

It is important to notice that the wings of the two cherubim on the Ark of the Covenant were spread out over the Ark. This means their wings were spread out over the Mercy Seat, on which the blood of sacrifice was sprinkled. The symbolism here is powerful. It is more than merely angels looking down from heaven; the imagery connects angels directly with the atonement, as though they were the beneficiaries of

the atoning blood. Especially when you consider that there were also two giant cherubim standing inside the Most Holy Place in the Temple along with the Ark (2 Chron. 3:10-13).

The two cherubim were 10 cubits tall with wings stretched out. Each wing was 5 cubits, which means the wings were likely attached at the center of the back, not the side; otherwise, the four wings and Cherubim would have been longer than the room, which was 20 cubits.

(Some translations state they were carved of wood and overlaid with gold, while others say they were made of cast metal and overlaid with gold; this is because the meanings of the original Hebrew words in this passage are not fully understood.)

Some people claim that the cherubim were winged lions, which is absurd; there is no reference to winged lions in the Bible or in any other Jewish writing that I know of. And none has ever appeared to anyone to do or say anything, as angels have appeared! But there are references to cherubim guarding the way to the Tree of Life with flaming swords. Should we believe that a winged lion could wield a sword?! No, the Bible is not *The Chronicles of Narnia*.

One of the reasons for believing they were winged lions is the known ancient sculptures in Assyria, which depict winged lions with human heads and have a similar name, *kirubu* (Hebrew *kerub*). But creatures that do not exist would not be represented in the Jewish Temple. Also, because winged lions have long bodies and are not upright like humans, they would have taken up most of the entire Holy of Holies! Therefore, the evidence indicates that they were winged angels.

The Bible contains progressive revelation from Genesis through Revelation, allowing us to learn more about angels the farther along we read in the Bible and on through to today. Although the Bible does not describe the appearance of Michael or Gabriel, we know that many of them have wings because they were portrayed with wings on the Temple walls. Therefore, it is a false claim that angels were never believed to have wings until the time of Constantine, as some writers and documentaries have stated. And Psalm 18:10 and Isaiah 6:2 say that angels have wings and fly! And because some of them do have wings, it is probable that angels with wings had appeared, even though no such statements are in the Bible.

In 2 Enoch, he describes how he was asleep when two angels appeared with a message from God that he would be going to heaven with

them and should tell his family about it before he left. He described those angels as having wings:

And there appeared to me two very large men, so big that I never saw such on Earth. Their faces were shining like the sun, their eyes were like a burning light, and from their lips fire was coming out. They were singing. Their clothing was of various kinds in appearance and was purple. Their wings were brighter than gold, and their hands whiter than snow. (1:6)

But why would they ever appear with wings? Spirit-beings do not need wings to fly, so why the wings? Just as they use spiritual swords and ride spiritual horses, they could certainly also have wings. It seems that there are similarities between the physical and spiritual dimensions that we cannot currently explain. For example, there is spiritual grass, flowers, and trees in Paradise and heaven, and even a massive wall around the great city where everyone lives in heaven, as reported by numerous people who have died and gone to heaven before being brought back to life.

In spite of two giant angels standing in the Most Holy Place and all of the angels that were said to have appeared during the centuries of the Old Testament and between the Testaments (2 Maccabees), the 1st-century Sadducees did not believe in angels! It is sad that some humans are unable to believe even with strong evidence. But that is just human nature. Perhaps the reason the angels announced the birth of Christ to simple shepherds rather than religious authorities was that the shepherds could believe the message, whereas the authorities could not.

We still have these modern-day Sadducees within Christianity today who refuse to believe in the appearance of angels, the working of miracles, etc. They will also reject the truth that salvation is available for Fallen angels.

### **Several Different Alien Races**

The NT book of Jude supports my view that the angels were living in this physical universe in physical bodies, as aliens:

And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. (v6) (KJV)

Just one Greek word in the original text is translated as “first estate” (archē) (746). CWD says it means, “*When it refers to time, it means the beginning, commencement . . .*” So it basically just means first, and using

context, most translations say, “*first place*.” Wasn’t that heaven? Why didn’t he just say they left heaven when it would have been clearer and more to the point to do so?

The Greek for “their own” is *idios* (2398). CWD says:

Properly one’s own. As pertaining to a private person and not to the public, private, particular, individual . . .

Were they living in their own private heaven? The Greek for “habitation” is *oikēterion* (3613), means “*A dwelling, habitation, abode*.” The Literal Translation (LITV) says: “*angels not having kept their first place, but having deserted their dwelling-place*.”

Again, it would have been much easier to simply say they left heaven. Since they did not have their own private heaven, it refers to their home in this physical universe. In other words, they left the place where they first lived and went to another place. *Clarke’s Commentary* is very insightful on this passage:

This seems to intimate that they had invaded the office and prerogatives of others, and attempted to seize on their place of residence and felicity.

Yes, they left their home planet and came to Earth. However, there is yet more evidence. In 1 Enoch, chapter 19, it says:

Then Uriel said, Here the angels, who cohabited with women, appointed their leaders; and being numerous in appearance made men profane, and caused them to err; so that they sacrificed to devils as to gods. (Richard Lawrence)

The R. H. Charles translation of the same verse says:

And Uriel said to me: ‘Here shall stand the angels who have connected themselves with women, and their spirits assuming many different forms are defiling mankind and shall lead them astray.

The Lumkin translation says, “*and their spirits, having assumed many different forms . . .*” The VanderKam translation says, “*assuming many forms*.” The Nyland says, “*assume many different forms*.”

It clearly refers to angels, and then it says that they take many different “forms.” It did not say that they look different from one another; why would that even matter? The Greek for “forms” is, *πολύμορφα*, and means “multiforms.” So what does it mean by “forms”? I believe, based on the wording and using good sense, that it could have been written “races” or “species.” However, they did not have a word for

“races” when Enoch was written. The only words that existed back then were “tribe” or “nation.”

Spirits inhabit physical bodies, do they not? Yes, therefore, the only way that any angel can impregnate a woman is for that angel to be living inside a “form” or physical body. So this could be saying that some of the Watchers were reptilian, some were like a praying mantis (explained later), and some were tall grays, etc. All these and more are known alien races that have been seen by people today.

### **The Angel-Human Connection**

The idea that humans can become angels in heaven is likely based on ancient references. The Jews believed that Enoch became the angel named Metatron. Also, a reference in the Targum of Palestine about Numbers 25:10-13, says:

The Lord spake with Mosheh [Moses], saying: Phinehas the zealous . . . Swearing by my Name, I say to him, Behold, I decree to him My covenant of peace, and will make him an angel of the covenant, that he may ever live, to announce the redemption at the end of the days.”

This reference said God is going to make Phinehas into “*an angel*” that will return in the last days, which is why Jews also believe that Phinehas was reincarnated as Elijah.

On the subject of whether angels reproduce, the consensus among many modern theologians is that they do not, although historical figures like Origen and Augustine believed otherwise. If they do not, they would be the only living things that God created that do not. Therefore, I believe they do.

Some argue that angels cannot reproduce because Jesus said they do not marry, but that is not good reasoning. Marriage is a human convention that is primarily a legal document. No such document or ceremony is necessary for any of Earth’s animal species, so why would it be needed for angels? This does not imply they are promiscuous; it merely means they do not need this earthly convention. Since I believe they reproduce, they must mate for life, with no document required. I do not believe that billions of human souls were created at the creation of the universe but are waiting in heaven until they can be born.

The argument was also made that angels do not have reproductive organs, LOL. No, they are spirits, so I imagine that they would just come close to each other and unite in the spirit, then with a bright flash of light, a baby angel appears.

We should also consider Esau and Jacob were twins and how they fought while still in the womb. Paul spoke about them and said:

. . . before the twins were born or had done anything good or bad—in order that God's purpose in election might stand: (Romans 9:10-13)

But why did God choose Jacob but not Esau, and Isaac but not Ishmael? Paul only mentions that it was God's "election":

"I will have mercy on whom I have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I have compassion." (Romans 9:14)

But why did God love Jacob but hate Esau (Mal. 1:2-3)? The Bible never provides an explanation for why God has chosen some people for blessing and not others. Jacob and Esau were human twin brothers who struggled with each other, even before birth, because of who they were in spirit, not flesh. One was chosen and the other wasn't, because the spirit within Esau was a Fallen angel, while Jacob was good.

This tells us it is not about race; a preacher can have a son who is a Fallen one. And even though the Jews are children of Jacob in the flesh, they are not automatically good angels, as seen in the passage above where Jesus called the Pharisees sons of Satan. So this is not about race. We are all either good angels or Fallen angels.

Yes, Paul said the Gospel was for the Jews first, but when they rejected the Good News, God then turned to the gentiles, so it means God is trying to reach all of humanity.

Concerning the opinion of the Early Church Fathers, Capel Berrow wrote in *A Lapse of Human Souls in a State of Pre-Existence*:

And by their representing the soul of man as lapsed from a dignity and purity of soul truly celestial, they must necessarily conclude that it took its origin from a celestial state. . . . And that our descent from heaven was considered by Christian writers as having been preceded by some pre-existent duration and habitation with the celestial inhabitants, we must necessarily suppose, or they were unnecessary pains to prove what none but Atheists will deny---that the soul of man sprung from God- but to return. (page 18)

Referring to later writers, he said:

It is the firm persuasion, says Grotius, of the ancient fathers, that 'the souls of men were originally possessed of the divine image'; which now they have lost, and that their regeneration is a [restoration] thereto. Greg. Nazianzen says, that the soul is of God, and divine, and partakes of the supernal nobility, which is also her ancient nobility. . . . All men, says Grotius, were from their birth sons of God, but they lost that privilege by

alienating themselves from him. . . . Maximus the martyr says, that the design of Christ's incarnation, was to make us partakers of a divine nature, [Greek words] as in the beginning. (page 20-21)

In other words, we were originally sons of God in heaven but became Fallen beings, and the reason Christ came was to restore us to what we were "*as in the beginning*." This shows that many insightful scholars have come so very close to actually understanding that we were once all angels in heaven.

Dale Black was a young man training to become a pilot when he was killed in a plane crash. He went to heaven and saw a group of people wearing white robes whom he did not recognize, who had come to welcome him into heaven. Though he had not known them on Earth, yet he knew who they were--

I felt so special, so loved. I had never felt such a deep sense of belonging. . . . No one was recognizable as an earthly acquaintance, but all seemed remarkably familiar. I didn't know these people, but somehow I knew they were my family—my spiritual family, my brothers, my sisters, spanning generations. . . . (page 107)

I did not notice racial differences, but I was aware that they had come from many tribes and nations. . . . (page 108) This is where I belonged. I was made to be in heaven. (Black, *Flight to Heaven*)

Notice that he realized that those people were part of his heavenly family, and he knew that he was made for heaven, but he was not quite able to grasp the full significance of that information; namely, that heaven was his home before he came to Earth; at least he did not clearly state this in the book (though it seems to be inferred).

RaNelle Wallace, in her book, *The Burning Within*, describes her experiences in heaven after dying from burns sustained in a plane crash. She specifically mentions that we existed in heaven before coming to Earth:

Scene after scene of living truth passed through me: history on Earth, history of our existence before Earth, principles, facts, things I had had no conception of. I saw them. . . . I saw that we all stood before our Father before coming to Earth, brothers and sisters in eternity. I experienced this anew, just as I had experienced it in my own pre-mortal life. I saw that we chose to come here, to face trials and to gain the experiences of this Earth. I saw that we elected to follow a Savior who would redeem us from the sins of our mortal lives and bring us back to our Father. I felt love and joy sweep over me again as we accepted Jesus Christ as that Savior. Then we raised our right arms, just as we might in a court of law,

and we made a sacred covenant with God that we would do all in our power to accomplish our missions on Earth. And I felt the tremendous honor of making this covenant before our Heavenly Father. We vowed, in effect, to become partners with him in bringing about goodness on Earth. We promised to use our time and energies and talents to help bring about the Savior's full purposes, to help bring our brothers and sisters back to him and to our Father again. . . .

Time did not exist; each of us had always had a relationship with [the Father]. (Ibid, page 107)

Notice that she appears to be saying that all people of Earth came from heaven (directly); she says nothing about a prior Fall. If we all came directly from heaven, then human life on Earth is a boondoggle of immense proportions, because most people born on Earth are not doing anything good, and many will end up in hell. There are in fact many very evil people who are committing great wickedness and inflicting much harm; I do not believe they came directly from heaven; though they were born in heaven as angels in the past.

Why would God set up such a system where his good angels are born on Earth and yet live wicked, evil lives full of murder, idol worship, etc.? Those who visit heaven and return are never shown the complete picture but are only given limited details of God's great purposes and plans. Therefore, she was not told about those who had Fallen away by following Satan millions of years ago. Or that those Fallen brothers and sisters are the ones we are trying to bring back.

She does not comment on this subject further, except to point out that a lady she knew on Earth had also come from heaven. It seems that many people on Earth came from heaven originally. I also believed I came from heaven many decades before understanding that we are all good or Fallen angels.

The Sibyl of Book 8 (not the pagan ones) wrote:

Therefore we sprung from the holy race of the heavenly Christ, are called of common blood, . . . (Book 8, line 645-646; Terry)

Another translation words it differently:

Wherefore we, sprung of the holy race of Christ  
In heaven, are surnamed brethren. (*New Testament Apocrypha*, Edited by Wilhelm Schneemelcher, Vol.2, Revised Edition, page 680)

The Latin Sibyl, likely the Tiburtine Sibyl, said:

The world is my origin, but soul have I drawn from the stars. (Ibid., page 681)

In 1860, Mrs. George John C. Duncan published the first edition of *Pre-Adamite Man*. In this book, she detailed how, during her studies of science and the Bible, she concluded that the recent advances in geology, archaeology, and paleontology showed that Earth must be “millions” of years old. Therefore, she believed that before the creation of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, God had created another race of physical beings, the pre-Adamites.

[T]he Pre-Adamites were the first form of angels, . . . these spirits once lived on Earth in bodies of clay, labouring, suffering, mourning, and dying? (Fifth Edition, 1866, page 239, 240)

She believed that those who lived and died sinless became the angels in heaven, but those who followed Satan in his rebellion became the Fallen angels. She believed that after the Fall of Satan, Earth was destroyed in a massive cataclysm at least as great as Noah’s Flood, which resulted in the animal bones and fossils that had been found. She was thinking in the right direction, but she had no knowledge that Satan’s original Fall was not on Earth, so her thesis was as close to the truth as it could be for the information she had.

If angels lived on Earth, would that not mean there were male and female angels reproducing? Duncan addressed this issue:

But why should female angels be less conceivable than female saints? (page 237)

If the Pre-Adamites were the first form of angels, as men are to be of saints, there need be no difficulty surely in admitting that, in the one case as in the other, and in the same sense in both, they may continue to exist, male and female, as they had lived on Earth. (page 239)

. . . finding in heaven that saints and angels are so like, we will not shrink from the possibility that they may have been alike also in that earlier portion of their respective histories. (page 242)

Both the Pre-Adamite theory and the Gap Theory are discussed in the next chapter.

## Chapter 4

### Understanding Genesis

*The theory that the narrative in Genesis is derived from the Babylonian, and is a purified, elevated rendering of it, is not so likely as that both are renderings of a more primitive account, to which the Hebrew narrative has kept true, while the other has tainted it with polytheistic ideas. – Alexander Maclaren (1826 – 1910) (Expositions of Holy Scripture, Volume 1)*

### The Mytho-History of Genesis

The term “myth” comes from the Greek word *mythos*, which means “story, narrative.” However, by the time of Christ, *mythos* had taken on negative connotations, such as “fable, fiction.” Paul warned Timothy to avoid “*godless and silly myths*.” This is still the view of many modern readers; however, scholars define it as a tale that contains true events but is told as a story, usually for a specific reason. This difference in understanding of the definition can cause confusion, which is why I am defining it here. The following is the view of myth by Christian scholars.

In 1901, Hermann Gunkel said this about myth in *The Legends of Genesis: The Biblical Saga of History*:

The writing of history is not an innate endowment of the human mind; it arose in the course of human history and at a definite stage of development. Uncivilised races do not write history; they are incapable of reproducing their experiences objectively, and have no interest in leaving to posterity an authentic account of the events of their times. Experiences fade before they are fairly cold, and fact and fancy mingle; only in poetical form, in song and saga, are unlettered tribes able to report historical occurrences. Only at a certain stage of civilisation has objectivity so grown and the interest in transmitting national experiences to posterity so increased that the writing of history becomes possible. . . . the art of writing

history, learned through the practice of writing national histories, applied to other spheres of human life, whence we have memoirs and the histories of families. (Trumpet Press edition, 2024, page 5)

Dr. William Lane Craig is a Christian apologist and research professor of philosophy at Talbot School of Theology and professor of philosophy at Houston Baptist Univ. This is his definition of myth:

A myth is a traditional, sacred narrative explaining how the world and man came to be in their present form. A myth seeks to explain present realities by anchoring them in the prehistoric past, and so to validate a culture's contemporary institutions and values. (Craig, *In Quest of the Historical Adam*, page 37)

In *The Lost World of the Flood*, Tremper Longman III of Westmont College and John Walton of Wheaton College and Graduate School, say:

In the ancient world, they did not consider what we call their mythology to be not real. To the contrary, they believed their mythology to represent the most important reality . . . .

Our defenses of historicity can become reductionistic if we become too focused on proving the reality of events rather than on embracing the interpretation of the theological significance being traced by the author. The text has no interest in trying to prove the events took place. They assume they did, as we. Instead they are offering an interpretation that constitutes the divine-human message that carries the authority of the text. Events are not authoritative, the interpretation of the narrator is. . . . [in] The ancient world . . . they do not have a line between myth and history. (page 17, 18)

Later in the same book, they said all the stories in Genesis are real, such as the creation, Adam and Eve, and the Flood, "*but the narratives are rhetorically shaped in order to present a theological message*" (page 92).

Myth is not a distortion of reality but a symbolic representation of truths too deep for mere facts to contain. Genesis, in its poetic grandeur, weaves history and mystery into a tapestry where the historical facts are hidden within the story. Genesis was not written merely as history, but to present a particular view of events that are not 100% literal as written. On his website, Dr. Craig said:

[A]ncient genealogies were not the work of disinterested historians but could serve non-historical ends. For example, the genealogy which constitutes the Table of Nations in Genesis 10, despite its notices "sons of" and "begot," is not about blood relations but lists peoples based on political, linguistic, geographical, and similar factors--and the author of Gen-

esis knew it. [www.reasonablefaith.org/writings/question-answer/the-genealogies-of-genesis-1-11](http://www.reasonablefaith.org/writings/question-answer/the-genealogies-of-genesis-1-11))

Many of the Early Church Fathers were able to see the mytho-history in Genesis. Origen said:

To what person of intelligence, I ask, will the account seem logically consistent that says there was a “first day and a “second day” and a “third day,” in which also “evening” and “morning” are named, without a sun, without a moon, and without stars, and even in the case of the first day without a heaven? (*On First Principles*)

Even Augustine did not believe that the six days of creation were literal 24-hour days. And the Jewish commentators, such as the philosopher and historian Philo (c. 20 BC-c. 50 AD), wrote with the same viewpoint. Yet, many Christians with limited thinking skills view Genesis with a modern factual mindset, even taking it at literal face value.

Twice in Genesis genealogies, the “*sons of*” actually includes grandsons and even great-grandsons. This indicates that the meaning is not literal. Craig referred to the eminent Assyriologist, Thorkild Jacobsen, who said that ancient Near Eastern literature should be recognized as “mytho-history” (Jacobsen, T. 1994, *The Eridu Genesis*. Pp. 129–42 in “*I Studied Inscriptions Before the Flood*,” ed. R.S. Hess and D.T. Tsumura. Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns).

Homer’s *Iliad* (1200 BC) is another example. Once believed fictional, we now know that Troy not only existed, but the war likely happened, just not every detail of the story. Craig agrees:

While the genealogies of Genesis 1-11 evince an interest in history on the part of the author and his audience, it is important to keep in mind that it is a mytho-history that is being narrated. Chronological calculations become inappropriate for such a genre. . . .

We should not imagine that the genealogies contemplate the enormous leaps that would be necessary to bring them into harmony with what we know of the history of mankind; but neither should we think them to comprise purely fictitious characters. We can avoid these polar opposites by taking the brief history they relate to be a mytho-history which is not been meant to be taken literally. (Craig, *In Quest of the Historical Adam*, p. 37)

As you can see, the scholarly definition of myth is not the same as our common usage. This information also shows us that Genesis was not written as narrative history but as mytho-history, which contains truth but is not 100% literal at face value. This is especially true when

we examine the six days of creation and the story of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden.

### **The Pre-Adamite (Gap) Theory**

Pre-Adamite beliefs originated slowly over several centuries. Gregory of Nyssa (4<sup>th</sup> century), “*is reputed to have thought that Adam's physical body was derived from animal forebears*” (Ibid, p. 6-7).

[M]edieval Jewish Midrash literature and in Cabalistic writings--hints of the same class of idea are discernible in commentaries that speculated about the possible existence of other worlds, separate from this one but existing prior to and independently of it. (Ibid, page 7)

David Livingstone, in, *Adam's Ancestors: Race, Religion & The Politics of Human Origins*, said:

The controversial though influential, French Calvinist professor at Groningen Sael Desmarets (Maresius) (1599-1673), who engaged in critical dialogue with a range of theological systems, also took on the challenge, arguing, in a critique that was later taken up by Diderot, that in essence the heretical pre-adamite doctrine could be traced back to figures such as Maimonides and Paracelsus. (page 40)

Both Paracelsus (1493-1541) and Giordano Brun (1548-1600) believed that the people of Asia, Africa, and the American Indians did not spring from the same ancestor as Adam. The first person credited with a complete Pre-Adamite theory, which posited that there were two separate creations (and that humans, or at least human-like beings, existed in both creations), was Frenchman Isaac La Peyrere, in his book, *Prae-Adamitae* (Men Before Adam) of 1655. It also contained several other controversial interpretations of Scripture, so he was strongly denounced as a heretic, with at least a dozen published refutations.

The Gap Theory and the Pre-Adamite theory officially originated in the 19<sup>th</sup> century, but a century later they were both lumped together by critics simply as the Gap Theory, even with many variations in the points of doctrine among the teachers. Here are the basics of them.

Some teachers of Pre-Adamism believed that Earth was populated by almost-humans who died at the same time as the dinosaurs and were, therefore, created millions of years before Adam and Eve. While others believed they survived and were those outside the Garden, where Cain went to find a wife and build a city. Another view is that the first creation in Genesis chapter 1 was of humanity in general, while the second creation story found in Genesis 2 merely details the creation of

Adam and Eve to be the first of a specific race; sometimes stated to be the white race.

The development of the sciences such as archaeology, geology, and paleontology began to show strong evidence of an old Earth, yet many pastors and theologians refused to consider the evidence. However, the most learned men and women did not merely say, *Don't believe your lyin eyes*; they accepted the evidence as an authentic, God-given witness alongside the Bible and sought to understand both. Thus, the Pre-Adamite Theory came to life in 1814, when Thomas Chalmers lectured on his theories, which he attributed to Simon Episcopus (1583 – 1643). Livingstone wrote:

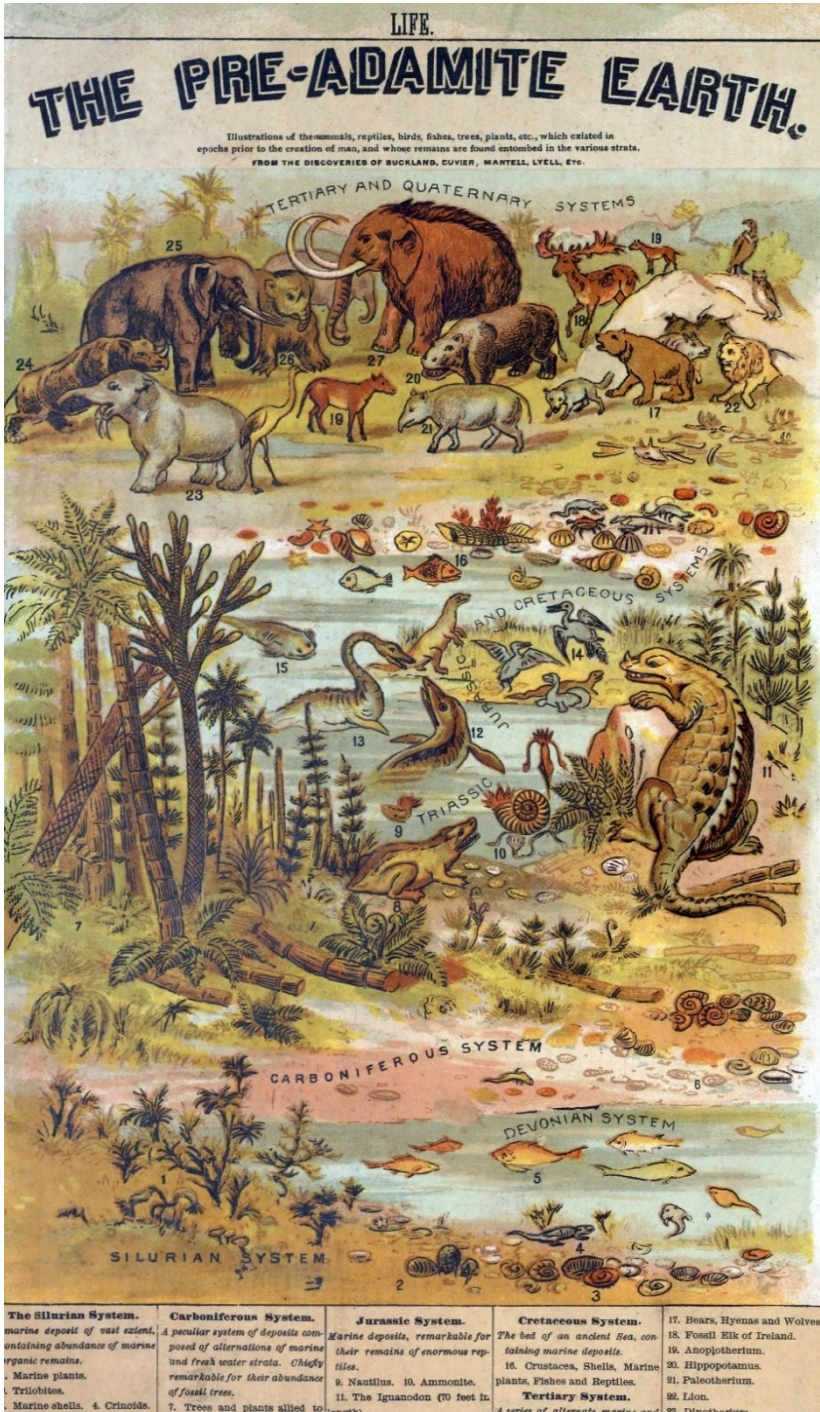
In their encounter with the new geology and the emerging human sciences, religious believers turned to the idea of a pre-adamite Earth and pre-adamite races in order to retain solidarity between scientific knowledge and theological creed. (page 107)

Several books on this subject were published between 1814 and the arrival of Darwin's theory of evolution in Nov. 1860. Oxford professor and geologist William Buckland (1784–1856) believed in a series of extinctions and creations (in the *Bridgewater Treatise*, 1836), because he did not hold that Noah's Flood could have created all the fossil layers.

In 1849, John Thomas (1805-1871) published the first edition of a theological book called *Elpis Israel* (The Hope of Israel), which included statements supporting Pre-Adamism:

[T]he surface of our globe, all disappeared; and it became "void," or empty, no living creatures, angels, quadrupeds, birds, or fishes, being found any more upon it. Fragments, however, of the wreck of this pre-Adamical world have been brought to light by geological research, . . . its organic remains, coal fields, and strata, belong to the ages before the formation of man, rather than to the era of the creation, or the Noachic flood. This view of the matter will remove a host of difficulties, which have hitherto disturbed the harmony between the conclusions of geologists and the Mosaic account of the physical constitution of our globe. (page 23 of the modern PDF edition)

Notice the mention of angels; Thomas believed the Pre-Adamic inhabitants were angels (Ibid, page 22), and the Pre-Adamic world existed for "*million of ages before the Adamic Era.*" He became the founder of the Christadelphians.



Edward William Lane (1801-1876) published two editions of *Genesis of the Earth and of Man: Or the History of Creation, and the Antiquity and Races of Mankind, Considered on Biblical and Other Grounds* (1856 & 1860). He wrote:

. . . the Bible itself indicates the existence of Pre-Adamites . . . (quoted in Livingstone, page 101).

John Harris D.D. (1802-1856) published *The Pre-Adamite Earth: Contributions to Theological Science* in 1856, but this book was highly philosophical. Mrs. Duncan's book mentioned in chapter 1, *Pre-Adamite Man*, was first published in late 1860 (close to Darwin's *Origin of Species*) and went through six printings and several editions.

In 1864, Dominick McCausland (1806-1873) stated that the Bible "was not written to instruct us in the knowledge of the physical sciences." (*Adam and the Adamite: The Harmony of Scripture and Ethnology*, page 4) (Quoted in Livingstone, p. 103-104.) Even though Alexander Winchell (1824-1891) wrote books with "Preadmites" in their titles, he did not share the same views as those above but was likely the first to espouse "theistic evolution." Pre-Adamite books continued to be written throughout the 19<sup>th</sup> century. The theories espoused in these books faced harsh criticism yet sold well, and the ideas in them were gradually accepted.

Livingstone observed:

Whatever its heretical beginnings, however, the theory later came to reside among religious conservatives . . . In each case the motivation was to keep faith with both science and the Bible. Pre-adamism's migration from heresy to orthodoxy, from its role as a weapon of skepticism to a tool of fundamentalism, speaks to the contingency of theological labeling. (Livingstone, *Adam's Ancestors*, page 220)

It seems obvious that the Pre-Adamite theory is the forerunner of the modern view espoused by Dr. William Lane Craig and others, that God created humanity ages ago, then selected two of them to be Adam and Eve; it simply lacks the cataclysmic destruction of the former world, with no gap or racist views.

### **The Gap Theory Analyzed**

The Gap Theory (GT) comes from the title of the first related book published in 1814 but was thereafter called the Pre-Adamite Theory until 1962. It is sometimes referred to as Restitution Theory, or even Re-Creation Theory. I researched the Gap Theory (GT) in the hope that it

would provide support for my aforementioned claims about Fallen beings before humans, but I found major problems with it. I was about to abandon it until I found evidence to support the main points; thus, I will present those flaws and present a Revised Gap Theory.

It seems that most people who support the GT only agree on a few main points, with different opinions on many other points. Though there are variations, here are the main points.

The GT says the universe was created in Genesis 1:1 and was created perfect, which caused the angels to shout for joy, as stated in Job (4:4-7). Therefore, the Earth must have suffered destruction in order to reach the state given in verse 2, “*formless and void*,” literally “*desolate and waste*.” Some Gap theorists claim that Satan and the angels lived on Earth, but when they fell, God destroyed them, and the world suffered destruction like Noah’s Flood. Therefore, the creation account that follows in Gen. 1:3-31 is a recreation of life on Earth.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the Earth. 2 And the Earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. (KJV)

These two verses are perhaps the two most examined and dissected verses in the entire Bible, with experts on many sides of every point of dispute. One scholar says one thing, another says the opposite, and another presents a third option. The arguments and evidence go on *ad infinitum*. There are so many views that it makes you wonder if any of them know what they are talking about, and I am not referring merely to Gap Theorists. You really have to be careful when relying on “scholars” for the answers to anything in the Bible.

### **Genesis 1:2**

Gap theorists claim that Gen. 1:2 should be translated, the Earth “*became without form and void*,” rather than “*was without form and void*,” which is the usual translation. Many present-day Hebrew experts do not accept the “became” translation. Gap supporters argue that the word is translated as “became” in other passages; therefore, it can also be in Gen. 1:2.

Some Hebrew experts who wrote about this passage merely gave a detailed analysis of syntax and grammar, which is not understandable to anyone who does not fully understand Hebrew, so I do not include it here. However, I found two sources that explained that the word “was” is not literally in the sentence at all but only a mark, or a letter,

at the end of the clause; the presence of which then requires the use of “was” at that point. Some people, when they learn this, conclude that it undermines the GT, but this is not the case.

The question then is, do present-day Hebrew scholars know more about Hebrew than the Hebrew experts who lived 150 years ago? Here is a quote from *Barnes Notes on The Old Testament*:

וְהוּא וְהוּא tohuṽ vābohu, “a waste and a void.” The two terms denote kindred ideas, and their combination marks emphasis. Besides the present passage בְּהוּ bohuṽ occurs in only two others Isa\_34:11; Jer\_4:23, and always in conjunction with תְּהוּ tohuṽ. If we may distinguish the two words, בְּהוּ bohuṽ refers to the matter, and תְּהוּ tohuṽ refers to the form, and therefore the phrase combining the two denotes a state of utter confusion and desolation, an absence of all that can furnish or people the land. . .

The above paragraph is identical to one found in *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Book of Genesis* (1866), page 32, by James Murphy, except for the added words “*tohu vabohu.*” (Since Barnes died in 1870 and his commentary was published in 1884, I wonder if Murphy may have helped to complete *Barnes Notes on The Old Testament.*) *Barnes Notes* continues:

We are going beyond the warrant of the sacred narrative, on a flight of imagination, whenever we advance a single step beyond the sober limits of the usage of the day in which it was written.

Along with the sky and its conspicuous objects the land then known to the primeval man formed the sum total of the observable universe. . . . it was not the object or the effect of divine revelation to anticipate science on these points.

Passing now from the subject to the verb in this sentence, we observe it is in the perfect state, and therefore denotes that the condition of confusion and emptiness was not in progress, but had run its course and become a settled thing, at least at the time of the next recorded event. If the verb had been absent in Hebrew, the sentence would have been still complete, and the meaning as follows: “And the land was waste and void.” With the verb present, therefore, it must denote something more. The verb הָיָה hayaḥ “be” has here, we conceive, the meaning “become;” and the import of the sentence is this: “And the land had become waste and void.” This affords the presumption that the part at least of the surface of our globe which fell within the cognizance of primeval man, and first received the name of land, may not have been always a scene of desolation or a sea of turbid waters, but may have met with some catastrophe by which its order and fruitfulness had been marred. . .

This sentence, therefore, does not necessarily describe the state of the land when first created, but merely intimates a change that may have taken place since it was called into existence. . . .

The deep, the roaring abyss, is another feature in the pre-Adamic scene. It is not now a region of land and water, but a chaotic mass of turbid waters, floating over, it may be, and partly laden with, the ruins of a past order of things; at all events not at present possessing the order of vegetable and animal life. . . .

Nothing but a creative or absolutely initiative power could give rise to a change so great and fundamental as the construction of an Adamic abode out of the luminous, aerial, aqueous, and terrene materials of the preexistent Earth, and the production of the new vegetable and animal species with which it was now to be replenished. . . .

Many people will boldly declare that the Hebrew text cannot say, “*became formless and void*,” in which case those people must possess greater knowledge of Hebrew than the best Hebrew experts of the 19<sup>th</sup> century!

Murphy goes on to say in his book (I include his explanation of the Hebrew for the benefit of present-day scholars), which is also identical to that which is in Barnes Notes (not yet quoted), except for the translation of the verses:

Before proceeding to translate this verse, it is to be observed that the state of an event may be described either definitely or indefinitely. It is described definitely by the three states of the Hebrew verb, — the perfect, the current, and the imperfect. The latter two may be designated in common the imperfect state. A completed event is expressed by the former of the two states, or, as they are commonly called, tenses of the Hebrew verb; a current event, by the imperfect participle; an incipient event, by the second state or tense. An event is described indefinitely when there is neither verb nor participle in the sentence to determine its state. The first sentence of this verse is an example of the perfect state of an event, the second of the indefinite, and the third of the imperfect or continuous state.

And the Earth had become a waste and a void, and darkness was upon the face of the deep; and the Spirit of God was brooding upon the face of the water.

After the undefined lapse of time from the first grand act of creation, the present verse describes the state of things on the land immediately antecedent to the creation of a new system of vegetable and animal life . . .  
 . (A Critical and Exegetical Commentary, 1866, p. 34)

Modern experts claim the grammar and syntax do not show a succession of events from verse one; therefore, it cannot be “*became without form and void.*” Yet, we just read above that Barnes (and/or Murphy) said that it is not a succession but still reached the conclusion of “became” because the verb is present; “*it must denote something more*” than the accepted, “*And the land was waste and void.*”

Young Earth Creationists (YEC) claim that the passage is describing the state of the Earth when it was created, not after its destruction. They assert that the correct meaning of the Hebrew words is simply the words used in many English translations, *formless and empty*. Weston Fields' book is a classic refutation of the GT. He is a YEC with a Ph.D. in classical languages.

Many YEC hold this simplistic interpretation. But what does it literally say?

E. J. Young, in *Studies in Genesis One*, words it, “*and the Earth was a desolation and waste*” (page 7). The *Interlinear Literal Translation of the Hebrew Old Testament*, by George Ricker Berry, indicates the same: (The image below was taken from my copy of this book.)

**1**

begin-  
1 cre-  
eaven  
urth. 2  
earth  
ithout  
void;  
rnkness

1 בְּרֵאשִׁית בָּרָא אֱלֹהִים אֶת הַשָּׁמַיִם וְאֶת הָאָרֶץ :  
[when] beginning the In  
earth the and heaven the God created

2 וְהָאָרֶץ הִיְתָה תֹהוּ וָבֹהוּ  
[being] darkness and ,waste a and desolation a being earth the (and)  
void;  
rnkness

וְלֹא-כָחַל אֱלֹהִים מְרַחֵם זֶלְפוֹ וְרוּחַ חֲבוּם זֶלְפוֹ

In  
ning  
ated  
and t  
And  
was  
void;  
ness  
the

Some scholars define “*desolation and waste*” as merely “chaos,” so German theologians coined the term *Chaoskampf* -- “*struggle against chaos*” and it has grown into a literal cosmic battle of mythical proportions. Theologians claim this chaos monster is connected to the myths of the Ancient Near East. God supposedly had to battle this pre-creation chaos monster, variously called *dragon*, *serpent*, or *Leviathan*, in order to create the world.

As Gerhard Von Rad, in his classic commentary on Genesis, said, “*creation [was] out of chaos*” (page 51). Thus, God creates order out of chaos, so you find many references to “chaos” connected to this verse by scholars. That sounds so theological, but it takes enormous liberties with the text.

There are indeed references in the Bible to an ancient dragon, serpent, and sea monster, which could indeed refer to the myths of the ANE, but you cannot derive that from the words “*was desolation and waste*,” but that is what these convoluting theologians are doing. I will discuss the myths of the ANE shortly. They want to castigate the Gap Theorists as believing that the text says something it does not, all the while believing in a chaos monster.

This is utter nonsense and a *scholarly scam*. Malcom E. Schrader wrote a paper that analyzed the nonsense of these scholars, “*Creation: Something from Something, Something from Nothing, or Something from Hardly Anything?*” (JBQ 36.3 (2008): 187-95). No wonder so many people just accept the simplistic YEC view that it merely describes a water-covered Earth, but that is not what the words literally express.

Theologians do not attempt to answer where the chaos originated. It is easier to reason it away as some kind of ethereal “nothing” out in the pre-created universe, and that God created the heavens and the Earth from this pre-creation chaos. Yes, they really assert that nonsense. It has been termed “*precreation chaos theory*.” At least one academic paper even wrongly stated that the *Precreation Chaos Theory* is another term for the Gap Theory, but the author is confused on this point.

Gap theorists point out that the Hebrew words, *tohu vabohu*, appear together in only two other places in the Bible, Jer. 4:23-25, and Is. 34:11. And both instances describe destruction:

I looked on the Earth, and it was without form and void. And to the heavens, and they had no light. 24 I looked on the mountains, and they trem-

bled, and all the hills moved to and fro. 25 I looked, and there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens had fled. (Jer. 4:23-25)

Some Gap Theorists say this passage refers back to the state of the world at creation in Genesis 1, but I agree with the opponents of the GT that it does not. It's clearly a prophecy of the state of the Earth after the coming Wrath of God upon the world at the return of Christ. Even so, it still supports the GT, because the usage of *tohu' va' bohu'* in this verse, means *waste* and *desolation*. It means earth will be destroyed and look just like it did in Gen. 1.

Yet, Weston W. Fields, in his book, *Unformed and Unfilled*, likely examined every instance of the word *tohu'* and every instance of the word *bohu'* and said they do not mean or refer to anything that has been destroyed: "*There is no implication whatsoever within the word of any reduction to that condition*" (p. 115). But he examined them separately.

There are many words, not only in Hebrew, but also in English, whose meaning is greatly affected by how they are used in a sentence. Another way to put it is, that the context affects the meaning. The *Biblical Commentary on The Old Testament* said about *tohu' va'bohu'*:

Whenever they are used together in other places . . . they are taken from this passage [Gen. 1:2] (Keil, 48).

The state of the world presented to us in Jer. 4 is not merely "*the opposite of creation*" (1) and expressed as "*a return to the pre-creation chaos*" (2) as often claimed by scholars; it is the aftermath of God's judgment upon the world = destruction.

(1) Routledge, Robin. *Did God Create the Chaos? Unresolved Tensions in Genesis 1:1-2*. Tyndale Bulletin, May, 2010, page 69.

(2) Ibid, page 86.

If the use of *tohu' va'bohu'* in both Jer. 4 and Is. 34 are taken from Gen. 1:2, then it is reasonable to conclude that they are being used in the same sense, not the opposite sense as alleged by the opponents of the GT. Even though Jer. 4 is not about Gen. 1:2, its description of the world is the same because they both refer to a global destruction. Jeremiah sees the world after it will be destroyed in the future, when there will be "*no man*." That is, when it will once again come into a state of "*tohu' va'bohu'*."

Since *tohu' va'bohu'* in Jer. 4 is the result of God's judgment, then *tohu' va'bohu'* in Gen. 1:2 can also be the result of God's judgment. To dis-

count this strong case for meaning through usage, as Fields does in *Unformed and Unfilled* (page 122), is an example of ignoring evidence you don't want to accept.

James T. Bartsch, a graduate of Dallas Theological Seminary, has this to say about *tohu* and *bohu*:

Whatever *tohu* means in Genesis 1:2, it means that the Earth at that stage constituted an inhospitable, unsuitable environment in which physical life in any form could exist, whether plant, animal, or human. It was non-organized or non-functional (*tohu*) as regards its ultimate purpose, which was to be a suitable environment for man and animals; and naturally, it was also void or empty (*bohu*) of any living organisms, just as is our moon today. (James T. Bartsch, *A Word Study of Tohu wa Bohu*, [www.wordexplain.com/Word\\_Study\\_tohu\\_wa\\_bohu.html](http://www.wordexplain.com/Word_Study_tohu_wa_bohu.html))

Let us look at Isa. 45:18:

For thus says the Lord,  
who created the heavens, who is God,  
who formed the Earth and made it,  
who has established it,  
who did not create it in vain [*tohu*],  
who formed it to be inhabited: (MEV)

Gen. 1:1-2 says that the world was *tohu*, but Is. 45 says God did not create the world *tohu*. So if God created the world not *tohu* in Ge. 1:1, then there must have been massive destruction that made the world *tohu* in Ge. 1:2. I find it hard to believe that God would create the world as a dark wasteland, unsuitable for life. In fact, not only does the above passage state that the world was created not *tohu*, but it says it was created "*to be inhabited*." How is *tohu* a world to be inhabited when it refers to a wasteland? No, so it cannot be the state in which God created it.

Here is more evidence in support of the GT. G. H. Pember, in *Earth's Earliest Ages* (1889), wrote:

An instance of this [usage] may be found in the history of Lot's wife, of whom we are told, that "she became a pillar of salt." Such a meaning is by far the best for our context; we may therefore adopt it, and render, "And the Earth became desolate and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep."

But if any further evidence be needed to prove that our verse does not describe a chaotic mass which God first created and afterwards fashioned into shape, we have a direct and positive assertion to that effect in the forty-fifth chapter of Isaiah: for we are there told that God did not create the Earth a *tohu*. This word, therefore, whatever meaning be as-

signed to it, cannot at least be descriptive of the earliest condition of Earth. But our translators have obscured the fact by rendering *tohu* “in vain”: they can hardly have compared the passages in which it occurs, or they would surely have seen the propriety of translating it in Isaiah’s manifest reference to creation by the same word as in Genesis. It is thus clear that the second verse of Genesis describes the Earth as a ruin; but there is no hint of the time elapsed between [the first] creation and this ruin. (page 27-28).

Arno C. Gaebelein, in *The Annotated Bible*, said:

“It is of the greatest importance to understand that the condition in which the Earth (not the heavens) is described in the second verse is not how God created it in the beginning.” (Vol. 1, 1913, page 16)

Legendary Bible teacher Derek Prince (1915-2003), taught the Pre-Adamic theory, now called the Gap Theory. On *tohu* and *bohu*, he said:

We saw that their association, the general meaning that they convey, is always of divine wrath, judgment, and abandonment. And so we concluded that there had been something that took place between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2, which caused divine wrath, judgment, and in a certain sense, abandonment to come upon the Earth. (1)

(1) Derek Prince - Results Produced by Lucifer’s Rebellion - Spiritual Conflict Series Vol. 1. YouTube. Channel: Praise Jesus Go.

There have been many great Bible teachers who held to the Gap Theory, including: Clarence Larkin, R.A. Torrey, Arthur W. Pink, J. Vernon McGee, Chuck Missler (1934-2018), Jack Hayford (1934-2023), Jimmy Swaggart, and many others.

Finally, the Jewish interpretation of Genesis 1:1-2 is varied; however, the Zohar speaks in a manner that completely agrees with the GT. This is a quote from *Zepher ha Zohar*, or The Zohar; from the glorian.org website, page title: *Zohar: Fallen Angels*. It discusses the races of Fallen angels who lived on Earth in the ancient past:

So the Rephaim and Anakim are each other at the same level. It was through them that the Earth reverted back to its previous state of תהו ובהו *tohu ve bohu*, occult words (which mean, their worlds became ‘confused and empty’ or “without form and void.”) They destroyed the temple, which is described by the words: “And the Earth was without form and void”, because the temple is the spirit of the Earth . . .

So, תהו ובהו *tohu ve bohu* contained the epitome of their history and final disappearance from the face of the Earth . . .

On the day that all these different races were exterminated, the Holy One along with the Shechinah created the heavens and the Earth anew . . .

This clearly and unequivocally states that when the angels fell, the Earth became *tohu ve bohu*; and then the heavens and Earth were recreated “anew.” Even though I do not believe the giants caused it in Gen. 1, because they came after Adam and Eve, it shows the Jewish view of the term, *tohu ve bohu*.

This Zohar quote appears to be the oldest known reference on this subject and may have even influenced *some* Christian expositors to develop their first Pre-Adamic theories.

It is likely that the above quote from the Zohar is at least partly responsible for some modern rabbis believing that Adam was not the first human. Rabbi Ariel Bar Tzadok said on YouTube:

. . . somehow somewhere these great human civilizations arose here on Earth; rose to great technological heights equal to, if not surpassing that of our own today, and somehow, in some way, at some time in history gone, faced disaster and their civilization was destroyed, and that this is what's echoed in the Bible . . . [many rabbis] very much believed that there was advanced human civilization here on Earth prior to our story of Adam. (Secrets of Genesis (III). Pre-Adamic Civilizations, and the Dominions of Inner Earth, KosherTorah School of Rabbi Ariel Bar Tzadok, Oct 10, 2018, YouTube)

The Gap Theory was very popular until the YECists came along and now ridicule, and even mock, those who dare believe this theory. Is it because Gap Theorists believe the world is a globe, and not flat? Okay, that was a jab; most YECists believe the world is round. That said, there is 99.9% probability that all Flat-Earthers are also YEC.

### **Other Points of the Gap Theory**

Another point of the GT in which I disagree is 2 Peter 3:5-7 that refers to Noah's Flood, not to the destruction that came about when the angels fell, which left the world “*formless and void.*” Read this again to refresh your memory:

5 But they deliberately forget that long ago by God's word the heavens came into being and the Earth was formed out of water and by water. 6 By these waters also the world of that time was deluged and destroyed. 7 By the same word the present heavens and Earth are reserved for fire, being kept for the day of judgment and destruction of the ungodly. (NIV)

It is very easy to see this passage as referring to Gen. 1:1-2, but it does not. I once agreed with the GT view, but after examining what

Peter said in the passage, it can only refer to Noah's Flood. Notice that it states the Earth was formed out of water and by water, which clearly refers to Gen. 1:1-2. But then it says, "*By these waters also the world of that time was deluged and destroyed.*" It does not say, "the world before that time," but "*of that time*," meaning the world that was "*formed out of water*" in Gen. 1:1-2 was destroyed by water. This must refer to Noah's Flood.

Gap Theorists claim that the theory was believed by some commentators dating back to Origen. Simply believing Earth is old was enough for GT authors to claim the quoted ancients supported the GT, but this is false. Old Earth Creationism (OEC) believes in a very old Earth, yet its proponents do not believe in an ancient cataclysm with angels or other humans inhabiting it. For example, Dr. Hugh Ross, Dr. John Walton, Dr. William Craig, and many others.

Daniel E. Wonderly (1922-2004) has written books supporting Old Earth Creationism, such as, *God's Time-Records in Ancient Sediments*, published in 1977. He had a B.A. degree in anthropology, a Bachelor of Divinity and Master of Theology from Central Baptist Seminary; and Master of Science in zoology from Ohio Univ. He later wrote *Neglect of Geologic Data: Sedimentary Strata Compared with Young-Earth Creationist Writings* in 1987. Many other books have also been written supporting OEC, such as *Creation and the Flood: An Alternative to Flood Geology and Theistic Evolution* (1977), by Davis A. Young, and *A Biblical Case for an Old Earth*, by David Snoke, 2006.

The GT claims that Earth was previously inhabited by living beings but destroyed before the appearance of Adam and Eve. Unfortunately, some of those 19<sup>th</sup>-century authors supported racist ideologies, which is now used as an excuse to attack the GT, as if the non-Pre-Adamite teachers of the same period held no racist views! And as if present-day Gap Theorists now hold racist views.

The Gap Theory was also taught in the *Scofield Reference Bible*, which helped the theory become widespread in the early 20<sup>th</sup> century. The more recent *Nelson Study Bible* (NKJV), though it falsely refers to "chaos," also appears to support the GT:

The two words **without form . . . void** express one concept-- Chaos. The Earth had been reduced to this state (Jer. 4:23); it was not the way God had first created it (Is. 45:18).

But in our present day, Young Earth Creationists have overtaken the GT because they are more vocal. They are also very hard-nosed, insisting on taking every word of Genesis 1 in English at 100% literal face value. They viciously attack teachers of the Gap Theory and Old Earth Creationism, accusing them of being false teachers, cultists, racists, and at the very least, compromising to accommodate Darwinian evolution. However, this claim is blatantly false, because Pre-Adamite and Old Earth doctrines existed before the arrival of Darwinism.

It is misleading in the extreme to call them “evolutionists,” as the YECs often do, simply because they accept an “old” Earth and universe. (Ted Davis, *Old-Earth (Progressive) Creationism: History and Beliefs*; Biologos.com, June 19, 2012)

Young-Earthers think that the gap theory leads to heresy, apostasy, and eventual surrender to evolution; gap theorists think that to insist upon a recent ex nihilo creation is so unscientific that it threatens to make the whole idea of creation seem ridiculous and unworthy of consideration. (Tom McIver, *Formless and Void: Gap Theory Creationism*. Creation/Evolution Journal, Vol. 8, No. 3, Fall 1988.)

Before I began researching the GT, I had only heard that it claimed to explain the dinosaurs prior to Adam and Eve, so I paid little attention to it. I was shocked when I learned that this theory is very close to what I have shown in previous chapters, that Satan lived in a body and was ruler of a civilization before God destroyed him. Though they place him on Earth rather than on another planet, which is understandable.

I was also surprised at the Scriptural support that was presented for the theory, and I even found additional evidence. Therefore, I feel it is necessary to provide a short teaching on my now Revised Gap Theory.

### **The Revised Gap Theory**

As we learned in the section on mytho-history, according to experts in early Hebrew literature, Genesis is not intended to be literal, the way we English speakers think of literal. It is an Israelite telling of the creation story.

John Walton, professor of Old Testament at Wheaton College and Graduate School, spent half of his life as a YEC but now supports an old Earth; therefore, has been attacked by Young Earth Creationists. Walton said that we face problems trying to interpret ancient texts literally, at face value, because we apply our own meanings to the words, rather than what those words meant to the original authors and readers:

If the Israelites understood the word *bârâ* [create] to convey creation in functional terms, then that is the most “literal” understanding that we can achieve. Such an understanding does not represent an attempt to accommodate modern science or to neutralize the biblical text. (Walton, *The Lost World, of Genesis One*, p. 41-42)

He said the best way to understand the meaning of a word is how it is used. He goes into great detail, providing evidence to support his claim that in Genesis 1:1-2, the material elements of this universe and this Earth already existed; and that to “create” merely means to assign function. In Walton’s view, at Genesis 1, verse 1, the universe could very well have existed for billions of years, including Earth; and that God is merely creating this present world, or this age. It does not prevent Earth from having had a different function prior to this world/age. However, he goes overboard and makes pretty much everything in Genesis about assigning function.

Even though astrophysicist Hugh Ross believes in an old Earth, he does not support the Gap Theory. He has an article on his website opposing it, in which he makes some good points and some not so good. Ross, along with many other expositors, believes it is incorrect to use “became” in this passage:

The argument that Genesis 1:2 can be translated “the Earth became formless and void” overlooks a critical distinction in the use of the verb *hayâ* in the Hebrew text. In the beginning of verse 2, *hayâ* appears without the Hebrew preposition *le*. Only the combination of *hayâ* + *le* would be translated “became,” rather than “was.” An example of this combination is found in Genesis 2:7, appropriately translated, “man became a living being.” . . .

But even if Ross is correct in his understanding of the Hebrew, that does not change the other evidence. Ross continues:

Another problem with the conclusion that the *tohû wabohû* implies chaotic, evil ruination arises from consideration of the spiritual and historical context of Genesis 1. Heathen myths of Moses’ time and Eastern culture depicted horrid monsters wreaking havoc on the early Earth.

A comparison of Genesis 1 with the *Enuma Elish*, the Babylonian creation account, reveals deliberate contrast to chaos, ruination, and evil. For example, the great sea creatures in the *Enuma Elish* are evil monsters. In Genesis 1 they are declared part of God’s good creation. While the *Enuma Elish* is rife with evil creatures and acts of destruction, Moses repeats, again and again, that the creation is “good.” . . .

Here again the claim is made that Gen. refers to a chaos monster, when there is no such thing; darkness, waste, and destruction does not equal a chaos monster.

The first mention of God declaring his creation “good” is in Gen. 1:4, which was long after any Pre-Adamic civilization existed, and thus, after the destruction of the old world. No such statement about “good” was made in reference to what happened in Ge. 1:1-2. How could *tohu* and *vohu* be good? Ross goes on to say:

Gap theorists grant more credit to the demons than Scripture allows. The Bible teaches that neither Satan nor any other created being has the power to destroy apart from God’s sovereignty, nor the power to create as God does.

Ross does not seem to understand that it was not Satan who destroyed the previous world, but it was the wrath of God that destroyed Satan’s cities that were on Earth; thus, whatever life existed on Earth was annihilated in the process. Ross continues:

Likewise, the gap theory concedes too much to nontheistic speculation. It communicates that no biblical constraints can limit or test anyone’s claims about life’s origin, including the claims of naturalistic evolutionism.

According to the gap view, scientists are free to attribute virtually all natural history, except for the last several thousand years, to godless, undirected processes.

I am not sure what he means by that slur, since he believes in an old Earth. Darwinism is “*godless, undirected processes*,” but has nothing to do with God creating a habitable world before the time of Adam, then destroying it because of Satan’s Fall, and then recreating it for humanity. Arlen L. Chitwood supports the GT and wrote:

*The heavens and the Earth* were created, there was a ruin of the material creation (because of sin), God took six days to restore the ruined creation, and He rested the seventh day.

*Man* was created on the sixth day, man fell into a state of ruin (because of sin), God is presently taking six days (6,000 years) to restore man, and God will rest the seventh day (the seventh 1,000-year period [cf. II Peter 1:15-18; 3:3-8]). (*Without Form and Void: Tohu Wavohu*, by Arlen L. Chitwood. [www.bibleone.net/](http://www.bibleone.net/))

He is clearly able to see the big picture. YECists blithely dismiss the fact that the official first day of creation does not begin until verse 3. We have the heavens, the Earth, and waters existing before the first day

of creation! They are very adamant about their literal exegesis, except where it does not fit their narrative.

### **Humanity and Adam and Eve**

The reader may not realize that Gen. 2 is a very different creation account from Gen. 1. In Gen. 1, the animals were made on the 5<sup>th</sup> day, and man was made on the 6<sup>th</sup> day. The word for man in Hebrew is “adam,” but it does not refer to an individual named Adam. That individual arrives in Gen. 2, before the beasts of the field are created.

As we have learned, theologians have been writing about the creation of humans before Adam for a long time. Some writers even claimed that the humans that came before Adam were an entirely different type of human, or not fully human. The opinions varied greatly, but gradually developed within modern scholarship as merely humanity existed before Adam and Eve; then Adam and Eve were selected from among them.

Modern thinkers who have followed in the footsteps of enlightened thinkers of the 19<sup>th</sup> century include Peter Enns, who wrote:

For one thing, natural science simply cannot be squared with a literal reading of the biblical description of human origins any more than with the biblical description of the cosmos (a stationary and flat Earth, solid dome above, etc.). Genesis 1 speaks of the instantaneous creation of humankind—men and women—on the sixth day. Genesis 2 speaks of the creation of a first couple— (*The Evolution of Adam*, page 57)

Kyle R. Greenwood wrote in, *Since the Beginning: Interpreting Genesis 1 and 2 through the Ages*:

Throughout Gen. 2–4, though, the male creation is accompanied by the definite article) *ha* (-twenty-one times, suggesting that *hā’ādām* is not considered the proper name Adam but is one male member among the population of humanity, thus translated as “the man.” (p. 13)

John Walton said about Gen. 1:1:

Taking the text seriously is not expressed by correlating it with modern science; it is expressed by understanding it in its ancient context. (*The Lost World of Genesis One*, p. 110)

Walton said we make a mistake when we read the text in English and give it meanings based on our modern way of thinking. We must understand the culture of the ancient world to understand how they would have understood the text.

He said the verb “bara,” create, “*does not intrinsically pertain to material existence*” (*The Lost World of Adam and Eve*, p. 29). Walton explained that when God called the period of light day, and the period of light night, he was establishing our present system of time; which turns out to be the 24-hour day. He further believes that the humans created in Gen. 1 were not Adam and Eve, but humanity in general; “*Adam and Eve should likely be considered part of that initial human creation in Genesis 1*” (Ibid, p. 114).

When open-minded, thinking scholars examine the creation accounts in Genesis, they realize several things, such as: In Gen. 1 mankind was ordered to multiply and fill the Earth, but in Gen. 2 Adam was created and placed in the Garden for an unknown length of time before Eve was created.

We know that there were several different species of early hominids, and we also know that they interbred. Some even bred with Neanderthals. It is known that some humans alive today have a small amount of Neanderthal DNA. Therefore, I believe this is how God created modern humans and the different races; then Adam and Eve were chosen from a group of these early humans.

William Lane Craig believes that Adam existed about 500,000 years ago when an ancient hominid became intelligent enough. However, my view is that Adam was the first *Homo sapiens sapiens* (HSS) who was born with an angel spirit, rather than an animal spirit. I do not mean that he was the first modern human, as there could have been a million HSS before Adam was born.

Gen. 1 says God made humans in the image of God (Gen. 1:26); so theology calls humans, “imagers.” Aside from having angel spirits, I believe that what makes us created *in the image of God*, is our ability to make independent decisions. Animals on Earth all have a high level of pre-programming in their brains, but humans have very little of this. Some animals will mate for life, others find a new mate each year; some return to their birthplace to mate; some mate, then die. It is all encoded into their DNA, but humans have the ability to decide to travel to the other side of the globe and start a new life there if they so choose, etc.

First, when the Bible says that man became a living soul, this is when the good-angel spirit entered the fertilized egg that became Adam; then Eve was born, also with a good-angel spirit of Adam’s own tribe, and went into the Garden to become his mate.

“This is now bone of my bones  
and flesh of my flesh;  
she will be called Woman,  
for she was taken out of Man.” (Gen. 2:23)

Once the humans of Adam and Eve’s time brought about the Fall of man, all humans born thereafter had Fallen-angel spirits. I deal with the Fall in detail in the next chapter.

Let us now examine some of the words used above. We have Hebrew dictionaries, but the early Hebrews did not create a dictionary. We only understand the meanings of those words through their usage in ancient texts. Their meanings are derived from the sentences and context, which is also influenced by what people believed the text was saying.

The phrase “*of my bones*” comes from two Hebrew words. One is (H4480) which means generally “out of,” as is likely in this case. It is paired with (H6106) which means “*bone, by extension the body.*” It is used “as an idiom of close relationship (Judg. 9:2; 2 Sam. 19:13,14)) (CWD).

“Which is better for you, to have all seventy sons of Jerub-Baal rule over you, or for one man to rule over you? Remember that I am your own flesh and bone.” (Jud. 9:2)

The term is not being used here with its 100% literal face-value meaning. We use a similar idiom today when we say that someone is our own “*flesh and blood.*” Meaning that they are of our family relation. So here in Judges, it means *I am your relative*, or *I am of your tribe*. Then the very last line says, “*taken out of Man.*” The Hebrew for *taken* is (H3947):

Its exact meaning must be discerned from its context. It is used of grasping or seizing a person or an animal. (CWD)

The Hebrew for “Man” at the end of v. 23 is (H376). It generally means a male, but “*there are times in the Hebrew Bible where it is used generically for a group*” ([www.workingpreacher.org/revised-common-lectionary/ordinary-27-2/commentary-on-genesis-218-24-5](http://www.workingpreacher.org/revised-common-lectionary/ordinary-27-2/commentary-on-genesis-218-24-5)). BDB and Strongs say it can mean “mankind,” while CWD says it does not.

Considering the meanings of these words and what non-literal Bible scholars believe about the passage, I see this verse employing mytho-historical language to convey that Eve came from the same tribe of humans as Adam.

Furthermore, we see that Cain was driven away from the Garden, got married, and built a city (Gen. 4:17). Where did he find his wife? And how could two people build a city? He did not marry her while he was in the Garden, but after he went to the land of Nod. This informs astute Bible students that there must have been many other people in the land of Nod.

It does not matter that other creation accounts of the Ancient Near East are older than Genesis; they are also mytho-history and so are not to be taken literally. More importantly, they are not inspired, whereas Genesis is inspired and tells the story that God wanted told.

Therefore, even though there are similarities between the ANE myths and Genesis, it does not mean that Genesis was based on them; or that Genesis is merely a reworking of the earlier accounts. No, the other accounts are not better or more reliable than Genesis! Other accounts are mytho-history like Genesis, but the stories they tell relate different truths, and they are not inspired.

## Chapter 5

### The Fall of Humanity

*The Fall in Eden was the moment when humanity, seduced by the promise of godlike power, traded divine communion for the bitter fruit of self-reliance. — Dietrich Bonhoeffer, Creation and Fall, Chap. 3 (1937)*

I have shown that we humans are indwelled by Fallen angels or good angels, but humans are not the first intelligent beings that God created; therefore, many aliens are also indwelled by angel spirits. Yet I believe that it is probable that some alien races may only have animal spirits. In this chapter, I cover Satan's identity and what really happened in the Garden of Eden at the Fall of humanity. Then I explain how the Fallen angels who descended and married the daughters of men in Gen. 6 and 1 Enoch were, in fact, aliens from another planet.

#### **Satan's Identity and The Watchers**

Genesis 1 concludes with the following brief statement:

God blessed them and said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the Earth and subdue it. (v.28)

This refers to the creation of humanity; then we learn about the creation of Adam and Eve in Genesis chapter 2; then Gen. 3 describes the Fall of mankind in the Garden of Eden, which is actually an allegory. While researching, I had an "aha moment" when I read the beginning of Gen. 6:

When men began to multiply on the face of the Earth and daughters were born to them, the sons of God saw that the daughters of men were fair and took as wives any they chose. (1-2)

It clicked in my brain because I already knew what happened in the Book of Enoch when the Watchers came down to Earth and taught evil to humanity. 1 Enoch reads almost like Gen. 6:

1 And it came to pass when the children of men had multiplied that in those days were born to them beautiful and fair daughters. 2 And the angels, the sons of heaven, saw and lusted after them, and said to one another: 'Come, let us choose us wives from among the children of men 3 And have children with them.' . . . Then they all swore together and bound themselves by mutual curses. 6 And they were in all two hundred who descended in the days of Jared in the summit of Mount Hermon, and they called it Mount Hermon, because they had sworn and bound themselves by mutual curses on the act. (1 Enoch 6:1-3, 5-6) (Joseph B. Lumkin translation)

The Watchers, who are believed to have been Fallen angels, came down to the daughters of men during the days of Jared. It then goes on to say that one of these Watchers beguiled Eve in the Garden:

And the third was named Gadreel; it is he who showed the children of men all the blows of death, and he led astray Eve, and showed the weapons of death to the sons of men; the shield and the coat of mail, and the sword for battle, and all the weapons of death to the children of men. (1 Enoch 69:6; Lumkin)

This unmistakably puts the Fall of humanity in the Garden of Eden upon these Watchers, and it also means that many humans existed when it happened. At the beginning of Gen. 6, it said mankind “*began to multiply on the face of the Earth.*” Early humans could have lived for thousands of years before the aliens arrived, and humans lived all over the Earth, not just in the Garden. The aliens chose a very lush part of Earth and confronted the humans there in ancient Mesopotamia.

But the Bible does not actually say that the snake in the Garden is Satan. Is Gadreel Satan? Satan means “*the accuser*” and “*the adversary*,” but Enoch appears to identify another Fallen angel as Satan:

And then Michael, Uriel, Raphael, and Gabriel looked down from heaven and saw much blood being shed on the Earth, and all lawlessness being done on the Earth. . . . Look at what Azazel has done, who hath taught all unrighteousness on Earth and revealed the eternal secrets which were made and kept in heaven, which men were striving to learn: 7 And Semjaza, who taught spells, to whom you gave authority to rule over his associates. . . . 8 And the women have borne giants, and the whole Earth has thereby been filled with blood and unrighteousness. (1 En. 9:6-7, 9)

1 Enoch said that Semjaza (1 En. 6:1-2) is their leader. However, in the next chapter, it said, “*The whole Earth has been corrupted through the works that were taught by Azazel: to him ascribe ALL SIN*” (1 En. 10.8). If all sin was put onto Azazel, does that make him Satan?

The word “Azazel” appears four times in the Hebrew Bible, all in Leviticus 16. This is about Yom Kippur, or the Day of Atonement. Each occurrence is translated in the KJV as “scapegoat.” But Dr. A. Nyland said that it is a mistranslation. It seems Tyndale in the 16<sup>th</sup> century “*misread the Hebrew word to mean ‘escaped goat’ and coined the word ‘scapegoat’*” (*The Complete Books of Enoch*, page 22). It literally reads, “*for Azazel.*”

At the time of the yearly sacrifice for the sins of the people, two goats were selected; one was killed for the sins of the people and offered to God, and the other goat had the sins of the people put upon it and sent into the desert, to Azazel. Thus, it reads:

And Aaron shall cast lots over the two goats, one lot for the LORD and the other lot for Azazel. (Lev. 16:8) (LEB)

Barnes Notes says:

Azazel is the pre-Mosaic name of an evil personal being placed in opposition to Yahweh. Each goat, having been presented to Yahweh before the lots were cast, stood in a sacrificial relation to Him. The casting of lots was an appeal to the decision of Yahweh . . . it was therefore His act to choose one of the goats for His service in the way of ordinary sacrifice, the other for His service in carrying off the sins to Azazel (see the note at Lev\_16:22). By this expressive outward sign the sins were sent back to the author of sin himself, “the entirely separate one,” who was banished from the realm of grace.

And also Lev. 16:10:

But he must present alive before Yahweh the goat on which the lot for Azazel fell to make atonement for himself, to send it away into the desert to Azazel. (LEB)

The *Biblical Commentary on The Old Testament* said:

The words, one lot for Jehovah and one for Azazel, require unconditionally that Azazel should be regarded as a personal being, in opposition to Jehovah. . . . We have not to think, however, of any demon whatever, who seduces men to wickedness in the form of an evil spirit, as the fallen angel Azazel is represented as doing in the Jewish writings (Book of Enoch viii. 1, x. 12, xiii. 1 sqq.) . . . but of the devil himself, the head of the fallen angels, who was afterwards called Satan; for no subordinate evil spirit could have been placed in antithesis to Jehovah as Azazel is here, but only the ruler or head of the kingdom of demons. (Vol. 1, page 398). (Kiel and Delitzsch)

He does not seem to realize that Satan was originally a Fallen angel before he became Satan. This information reveals that Azazel is responsible for the Fall of humanity, which is very strong evidence that he is Satan. The guilt for all sin is put onto him.

Notice also that there are two goats mentioned in Leviticus; one was for Yahweh, and one for Azazel. If one goat is sacrificed for our sin, what is the point of having a second goat named Azazel that is sent out to roam free in the desert and has the sins of the people laid upon it? I believe the two goats represent two groups of people; God has taken one group for himself, and their sin is removed with the sacrifice. The other group is still wandering the world; they are still in their sins and belong to Azazel. And the ultimate guilt belongs to the Fallen angels.

All of this evidence made me believe that Azazel is Satan, until I read a passage that said Azazel is one of the Watchers who has been bound until the Day of Judgment:

“And again the Lord said to Raphael: ‘Bind Azazel hand and foot, and cast him into the darkness and split open the desert, which is in Dudael, and cast him in. 5 And fill the hole by covering him rough and jagged rocks, and cover him with darkness, and let him live there for ever, and cover his face that he may not see the light. 6 And on the day of the great judgment he shall be hurled into the fire.’” (1 Enoch 10:4-6) (Lumpkin)

Since more than one Watcher appears responsible for the Fall of humanity, it does not look like we will be able to pinpoint which Watcher is Satan. But it is clear that these Fallen ones deceived Eve and taught evil to mankind. Therefore, all of the Watchers are metaphorically depicted in the story as the serpent in the Garden.

The other leader of the Watchers is called Semjaza. The meaning of this name appears to be different in every reference source. The *Sepher ha Zohar* says this:

The ancient name of the chief of the fallen angels, known previously only from the Greek and Ethiopian versions, has been discovered in an Aramaic fragment of 1 Enoch in Cave 4 in Qumran, spelled שמיחזה. For the sake of scholars dealing with the topic that may have a problem reading modern Hebrew, let me summarize the proposed solution offered in a study on the origin of this name: it is the result of some phonetic process concerning two Aramaic terms, namely Shemaya, meaning ‘heavens,’ and Haza, a verb meaning ‘he has seen.’ As such, the name of the angel means ‘the one that has seen or watched heaven,’ referring to the state

of this angel before the rebellion and fall. (Zohar: Fallen Angels, from <https://glorian.org/learn/scriptures/judaism/sepher-ha-zohar/zohar>)

Enoch says they came down during the time of Jared (1 En. 6:6), and according to the Genesis timeline, Jared was born 1,196 years before the Flood. So, they had time for the birth of many giants all over the world; enough time for the knowledge they brought to spread throughout the world, along with much violence and oppression to occur. However, it is likely that the length of years listed in Genesis is not literal, as I have already alluded to; therefore, it was several thousand years until the Flood.

I was surprised when I read Andrew Collins' observation on this, as he also connected the Garden deception with the arrival of the Watchers:

[I]t firmly associates the rebellion of the two hundred Watchers, during the age of the patriarch Jared, with the beguiling of Eve and thus with the corruption of humanity. Despite this realization, it would be foolhardy to accuse one Watcher alone of this most heinous of crimes, for it seems clear that at some point in the distant past the Watchers were collectively seen as 'the Serpent' who divulged the hidden wisdom and knowledge to the First Parents, a metaphorical reference to humanity in general. In doing so, it caused them to commit the first sin, the act of self-awareness. . . . then it meant that the story of the 'Fall of Man' in the Garden of Eden was merely a highly abstract expression of the way in which the Watchers supposedly corrupted the minds of human kind. (*From the Ashes of Angels*, page 41-42)

And I thought I was the only person in the world who had made this connection! (Yet he does not actually believe the Watchers were aliens, or even Fallen angels. He spent the rest of his book searching for a group of ancient people who could have been those Watchers but did not find them.)

The insight regarding the Watchers and the Fall of humanity is not limited to historians of alternate history; New Testament scholar Amy Richter wrote:

According to the Enochic watchers' template, evil came into the world when the watchers transgressed their heavenly boundary to engage in illicit sexual contact with women and teach them illicit arts. The consequences of the watcher's transgression are violence, unrighteousness, evil, idolatry, and disease. (*The Enochic Watchers' Template and the Gospel of Matthew*, PhD dissertation, quoted in; Heiser, *Reversing Hermon*, page 72)

And Michael Heiser said:

For many Jews in the Second Temple Period, the proliferation of evil throughout humanity should not be laid at the feet of Adam, but of the Watchers. (*Reversing Hermon*, page 105)

It is not just a coincidence that the woman mentioned in Enoch is named Eve (Adam is mentioned in different chapters of Enoch). The wording suggests it is referring to the Eve in the Garden who was deceived by the serpent. A watcher “*showed the children of men all the blows of death, and he led astray Eve, and showed the weapons of death to the sons of men*” (1 Enoch 69:6 Lumpkin).

Notice that Eve was led astray, and weapons of war were given to “*sons of men*.” This agrees with my interpretation that Adam and Eve were not the only humans on Earth during the Gen. 3 account of the Serpent deceiving Eve. And that the men were also guilty for the knowledge they received.

The phrase, “*sons of heaven*,” in 1 En. 6:2 (page 94), could be a cryptic message suggesting they were from another planet up there in the heavens or that they were Fallen angels. In the Bible, the word “heaven” is used for the place where God dwells, but also for the upper regions of the atmosphere, including what we call outer space.

Another researcher made a similar observation:

[Satan's] description as the “wisest” and “most cunning” of all the creatures – as well as his promise to mankind that if it but eats of the “forbidden fruit” of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil – has led some commentators to draw parallels between him and the “civilizing” and “wisdom” gods of other cultures, the gods who taught mankind the arts and sciences of civilization. (Farrell, *The Cosmic War*, page 327)

Many of the Early Church Fathers also believed that the Watchers were responsible.

When the aliens caused the Fall of humanity, God put a curse on those aliens who made Earth their new home:

The Lord God said to the serpent: “Because you have done this, you are cursed above all livestock, and above every beast of the field; you will go on your belly, and you will eat dust all the days of your life. I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and her offspring; he will bruise your head, and you will bruise his heel.” (Gen. 3:14-15)

Notice that God caused the serpent to “*go on your belly*” and “*eat dust*.” Aliens have not been changed to crawl or eat dust, which is taking it literally, but since the passage is an allegory, it suggests that they became Earthbound and could no longer leave the planet in their space-ships. This is why they were unable to escape the destruction of the Flood. They spent the remainder of their lives walking wherever they needed to go.

Chapter 10 of 1 Enoch tells us that the souls of the dead humans were crying out to God; then God tells the angel Uriel to go tell Noah to build the Ark. It said that although the Watchers (aliens) had hoped to live forever, they would only live for another 500 years (1 En. 10:10). They likely had developed advanced DNA manipulation over the vast eons, which allowed them to live nearly forever, if not forever. Noah was 600 years old when the Flood occurred, which means the judgment was announced when he was 100 years old, but he did not begin to build the Ark right away.

When the Flood took place, all of the aliens were killed, including their offspring, the giants, whose spirits became demons. In 1 En. 15, the two hundred Watchers became the principalities and powerful spirits ruling nations, and God made one of the Watchers into the “*god of this world*” (2 Cor. 4:4). I can imagine God saying to him, *You want to build a celestial empire to rival all other empires? You want to be a god? Okay, I hereby grant that you shall be the god of Earth, but you must get all humans to worship you, or you will be cast into hell!*

### **Physical Beings or Spirit Beings?**

Many people want to interpret the passages in Genesis 6 and 1 Enoch literally, claiming that Fallen angels came to Earth in spirit form and somehow manifested with fully human bodies. Just because angels can appear in human form here on Earth does NOT mean they actually become human with blood coursing through their veins and with physical DNA.

Are we expected to believe that when the angel Gabriel appeared to Mary, while he was speaking to her, he had blood flowing through his veins? No. If that were the case, then every single time an angel appeared, they could be killed. No, they do not become physical; they only *appear* as solid humanoid beings; they do not become human.

The Apostle Paul said that Satan “*transforms himself into an angel of light*” (2 Cor. 11:14) (KJ3). Does this mean that he actually becomes a

good angel? Satan has appeared to people in the form of a good angel; therefore, he has become one-- NO! It means he merely takes on the appearance of one.

But maybe they could somehow transform into humans, as the claim goes; to change from an angelic body to a human body. Human bodies have spirit-bodies inside of them, right? Yes, so angels are spirits, right? Yes. They would not have been able to simply change into humans; they were already spirits, so they would need a fully functioning adult body to inhabit. Where would this physical body come from? Are we expected to believe that just because an angel sins, it is given a physical body to live in? Says who? Based on what evidence? No, it's nonsense!

It is NOT referring to actual angels that somehow acquired their own flesh-and-blood bodies; and since it cannot refer to spiritual beings alone, then the only way in which these “sons of God” could reproduce with humans is for them to have been actual beings from another planet.

Notice that Gen. 6 said they “saw” the women, who were “fair.” Other translations say “beautiful.” It is well known that most species of aliens are ugly, especially reptilians; therefore, it is no surprise that they found human women attractive and wanted to have their offspring.

And they have gone to the daughters of men on the Earth, and have had sex with the women, and have defiled themselves, and revealed to them all kinds of sins. 9 And the women have borne giants, and the whole Earth has thereby been filled with blood and unrighteousness. (En. 9:8-9)

Reports from those who have been abducted by small gray aliens, say that on board the craft, they sometimes see reptilian beings who rape women. Which means they are having actual sex with them. A lady in Africa was shown two children that looked half-human and half-reptilian and was told, “*These are yours.*” (Image on the next page.)

She made her claim public in the early 2000s, so the article is no longer online, making her name unavailable. So this is a real eyewitness report that supports what we were told in the text of Gen. 6. However, as we will learn, the Wachter aliens did not rape the women, but the women agreed to have the alien offspring.

## **The Fall in the Garden of Eden**

First, we continue with 1 Enoch to learn more about the Fall of man. We have already learned from Enoch that these beings taught hu-

mans to make weapons and make war. Their knowledge brought the downfall of humanity. They began to teach evil to their wives, and apparently, to all of humanity:

And Azazel taught men to make swords, and knives, and shields, and breastplates, and taught them about metals of the Earth and the art of working them, and bracelets, and ornaments, and the use of antimony, and the beautifying of the eyelids, and all kinds of precious stones, and all coloring and dyes. . . (1 En. 8:1)

Semjaza taught the casting of spells, and root-cuttings, Armaros taught counter-spells (release from spells), Baraqijal taught astrology, Kokabel taught the constellations (portents) . . . And as men perished, they cried, and their cry went up to heaven. (1 En. 8:3)

We can see that the aliens were highly advanced and brought a vast amount of knowledge to the uneducated humans, who were practically cavemen by comparison. Adam and Eve could eat of any tree in the Garden except the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, which is exactly what the aliens gave to us.

I have shown that we are all angels, and it should be pretty evident that most humans are *Fallen*. It is my firm belief that God created this world *as we know it today* and placed humanity on it specifically to regain many of his Fallen angels. First, I will present some foundational information, then dig deeper into the details.



Christian theology expects us to believe that God created the world to forever be the Garden of Eden and that God was shocked and horrified when Adam and Eve disobeyed and became “Fallen” beings, whom he then cast out of the Garden. Afterwards, all humans born on Earth are supposedly born already in a Fallen condition because of what Adam and Eve did; therefore, they are headed for hell at the moment of birth. But let’s look at the facts of the case.

The Bible said that God predetermined before the foundation of the world that Jesus would come to be our sacrifice for sin, literally foreordained:

“He was foreordained before the creation of the world, but was revealed in these last times for you” (1 Peter 1:20)

Theologians accept this statement to a certain point, but for it to be true, it means that God planned for the Fall of Adam and Eve to take place. The Merriam-Webster definition of foreordain is, “*to dispose or appoint in advance: predestine.*” Theologians sidestep the obvious and claim that God did not actually foreordain the Fall of humanity, but that he merely foreknew that it would happen. Michael S. Heiser in *The Unseen Realm* said:

... divine foreknowledge does not necessitate divine predestination. . . . There is no biblical reason to argue that God predestined the fall, though he foreknew it. (page 64, 66)

There are huge problems with this view. I prefer the opinions of *Barnes Notes*, and also *The Complete Word Study Dictionary*. The Greek word (proginōsko) (4267) translated as “foreordained” can indeed be translated “foreknew,” but there is more to it. CWD said:

In the language of Scripture, something foreknown is not simply that which God was aware of prior to a certain point. Rather, it is presented as that which God gave prior consent to, that which received His favorable or special recognition. Hence, this term is reserved for those matters which God favorably, deliberately and freely chose and ordained.

So, here is what the Bible says happened: God created the Garden of Eden, placed Adam and Eve in it, put the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil in it, and said not to eat of it, and then allowed Satan to go and tempt them to do so. We are expected to believe that the only reason God did that was so we could have a choice; so now, billions of people are dying and going to hell, just so we could have a choice. No,

that is false. It was planned that Jesus would come to die for our sins; therefore, God planned for the Fall to take place.

Official Christian theology expects us to believe that billions of people deserve to burn in hell for eternity merely because they were born on Earth, even though they committed no prior evil. That does not sound like a *just and fair* God. This is one of the reasons many people have a problem with Christianity. It does not seem right to them, and it is not right.

So, why would God set it up this way? He did not. (I am not going into Universal Salvation here.) Humans are not headed for hell when they are born; they were already headed for hell before they were born because they rebelled against God when they were reptilians living on Rahab.

God could not simply grant those now Fallen angels sweeping amnesty, so he formulated a plan to save many of them. This is why God arranged for the Fall in the Garden to take place, so he could cause those Fallen angels to be born here on Earth, giving them a chance to repent of their sins and be brought back into God's family. It does not matter that they do not remember their prior rebellion and therefore cannot directly repent of it; our merciful God has provided that if they repent here and now for their sins on Earth, they can be saved, which includes all past sin.

Once the Fall of Satan and the angels took place, then God's plan of redemption was set in full motion, and is still going today. The highly intelligent reptilians, who have been developing for millions of years, may possess superpowers compared to us simple humans, but God is smarter than they are.

So let us now dive deeper into Genesis, one step at a time. Consider how similar these two stories are: The Bible teaches that many angels "fell" when they rebelled and were cast down to Earth. And we also see Adam and Eve, were supposedly eternal-spiritual beings and they disobeyed and "fell," and were cast out of the Garden of Eden. It cannot be mere coincidence that these two stories are similar, because they are connected.

Therefore, I believe the story of Adam and Eve in the Garden is an allegory. In the same way that a parable encodes truth, an allegory encodes truth that God wants us to discover. The only difference is that a parable is fiction, while an allegory is true, but not literal at face value.

An allegory is defined as:

a story, poem, or picture that can be interpreted to reveal a hidden meaning, typically a moral or political one.

Origen said about the tree and the Garden of Eden:

Surely, I think no one doubts that these statements are made by Scripture in the form of a figure by which they point to certain mysteries. (On First Principles 4.3.1)

Now notice the underlined words below:

Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said to the woman, "Has God said, 'You shall not eat of any tree of the garden'?"

2 And the woman said to the serpent, "We may eat of the fruit from the trees of the garden; 3 but from the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, 'You will not eat of it, nor will you touch it, or else you will die.'"

4 Then the serpent said to the woman, "You surely will not die! 5 For God knows that on the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." 6

When the woman saw that the tree was good for food, that it was pleasing to the eyes and a tree desirable to make one wise, she took of its fruit and ate; and she gave to her husband with her, and he ate. 7 Then the eyes of both were opened, and they knew that they were naked. So they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves. (Gen. 3:1-7)

The serpent is clearly described as "*a beast of the field*," which is part of God's physical creation, not merely a spiritual being, and not human. Actual serpents do not talk; only intelligent beings speak. Dr. Michael Heiser did not believe in aliens, yet he had this to say about the serpent:

[I]n light of the serpentine appearance . . . Eve was not talking to a snake. She was speaking to an bright, shining upright being who was serpentine in appearance, and who was trying to bewitch her with lies. (Heiser, "The Nachash and His Seed: Some Explanatory Notes on Why the 'Serpent' in Genesis 3 Wasn't a Serpent" (Dept. of Hebrew and Semitic Studies, UW-Madison, February 2007) (Quoted in, *The Secret History of The Reptilians*, Roberts, page 47)

The serpent is described as "*more subtle*" than any other creature that God created. The word *subtle* is (arum) (6175), which means to be crafty and shrewd. It's used in the OT to refer to people who have knowledge and intelligence (Prov. 12:23; 14:8; 14:18; 22:3; 27:12). This

is what we see with the aliens; they have large brains and have developed their knowledge and technology to a very high level.

Look how far humans have come in only the last 150 years; we went from horse and buggy to supersonic travel and spaceflight, even DNA splicing and cloning living animals. Just think how advanced we could be in another 5,000 years. But aliens have been in development for millions of years!

In Genesis, we see allegorically that it was Eve who first ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. We learned from Enoch that sin entered the world because the aliens took human women as wives and taught them evil. Thus, we can now understand why the Bible puts the entrance of sin in the world upon Eve; she represents all the women who willingly became the wives of the aliens. When Eve gives the fruit to Adam, this tells us that their sin was not limited to having alien offspring, but that it spread throughout the entire community because the aliens also taught men how to make war and commit other evils.

Eve recognized that the fruit could make her wise; in other words, the human women saw the aliens with their jewelry, makeup, and clothing and realized that they were smarter than the humans who could not make those items. This is why the women decided to become their wives and have their offspring.

There is nothing wrong with knowledge and advancement if it only leads to good. So why did God tell ancient humans that knowledge of good and evil was forbidden to them? Because God knew the aliens were going to show up with their corrupted knowledge and lead the humans astray. The knowledge they brought included astrology, witchcraft, warfare, etc.

According to the serpent, this *knowledge* would make the stupid humans “like God,” knowing about good and evil. People in the New Age Movement are seeking this “secret knowledge” of the spirit world, which they believe will enable them to become like God. What exactly was the secret knowledge? It was knowing the difference between good and evil.

Now, why would knowing the difference between good and evil be a bad thing? Well, if you know the difference between good and evil, and you do something evil, then you are guilty of sin. This means that before they knew the difference, whatever they did, they were not

guilty, just like the wild animals. Now that they know the difference, they must do only good, or they become guilty; but it's impossible to do only good. Thus, the Fall of humanity took place. But God has provided a way for our salvation; it is as simple as asking Jesus to forgive your sins and following his teachings. Dr. Heiser said:

Reversing cosmic upheaval required something greater than the law [of Moses]. It required a Messiah whose atoning death would ripple throughout the cosmos, healing the entire creation. The birth, death, and resurrection of the Son of God reconciles all things, whether on Earth or in heaven (Colossians 1:19) and holds the entire creation together (Colossians 1:16–17). (Heiser, *Reversing Hermon*, page 119)

After they ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, they hid themselves from God because they realized they were naked. Then God said, “*Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you not to eat?*” (Gen. 3:11). God then made garments of animal skin for them. This shows us that their disobedience spiritually uncovered them, or exposed them. They no longer had the covering of ignorance, figuratively speaking. They now knew the difference between good and evil.

I have read *uninsightful* authors on Genesis who actually said that the serpent did humans a favor because the knowledge of good and evil is beneficial. These commentators lack the full picture of what took place. They also point out that neither sin, disobedience, nor rebellion is mentioned in the account of Adam and Eve. Yes, because it is an allegory that must be correctly interpreted, and it was impossible to grasp the full understanding of what really happened before realizing that the serpent represents the Watchers of Enoch, who were actual aliens.

The debate about the creation and Fall in Genesis runs through the entire spectrum of possible interpretations. One writer referred to the Fall as an “advancement”:

A positive view of Genesis 3, as old as Irenaeus, has received a chorus of adherents in recent years; it describes a process of maturation, an upward fall. Humans move out from under the parental hand of God, a necessary move if they are to grow up and become truly human. As always, the development to a higher level of self-consciousness is bought at the price of pain and suffering (cf. Eccl 1:18). If humans are created in God's likeness, it is asked, is not becoming like God in knowing good and evil an advancement within an already created reality? (Terence E.

Fretheim, *Is Genesis 3 a Fall Story?* Word & World, Luther Northwestern Theological Seminary, St. Paul, MN, 1994)

Yes, knowing the difference between good and evil is a form of enlightenment; however, once humans sinned, then they lost the spark of God inside of them; this is certainly not a good thing. However, if we follow God's plan, our ultimate destiny is to become perfected eternal beings once again, at the Rapture/resurrection. We can now see how the Fall was all part of God's grand plan for his Fallen angels, who were once aliens and are now humans.

But I have not addressed the often-discussed question the serpent asked Eve, "*Did God really say?*" Since this is not to be taken literally, it likely means the women at first refused to go along with the aliens, but then— (the aliens were very wise, you know, and the humans were dumb)--- the serpent questions whether the women really and truly know what is best for them. In other words, "*Are you sure you know what God wants and approves of? Let me enlighten you; here is the truth. God is trying to keep something from you because he knows your eyes will be open . . .*" Then they begin to question and doubt if they in fact understand what God said. So the deception begins to take root in their minds, and they succumb to the highly advanced aliens: "*Perhaps they really do know more than us naked humans.*"

Thus, the Fall happened, and our innocence was stolen, but it was all part of God's plan.

A final point on this section: a few commentators have actually suspected a sexual connection to the Fall, because Adam and Eve became naked:

There is a long Christian tradition which sees sex as intimately involved with the Fall and at the root of what the theologians call "original sin". (Gibson, *Genesis Vol. 1*, page 126)

## The Curse

As punishment for eating from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, God said:

16 To the woman He said, "I will greatly multiply your pain in childbirth, and in pain you will bring forth children; your desire will be for your husband, and he will rule over you." (Gen. 3:16)

This seems like a strange punishment just for seeking knowledge. But the women did much more than that; they had human-alien offspring. So it now begins to make sense. Because they agreed to marry

aliens, hereafter the woman's desire for *human* males will be increased, and so it is that for the majority of little girls, their main desire is to have a husband. The main desire of boys is to have adventures. Getting married is not number one on the list with boys, as it is with most girls. Thus, it is no surprise that romance is the top selling genre of novels. Far above any other genre.

To Adam God said:

"Because you have listened to the voice of your wife and have eaten from the tree about which I commanded you, saying, 'You shall not eat of it,' Cursed is the ground on account of you; in hard labor you will eat of it all the days of your life. 18 Thorns and thistles it will bring forth for you, and you will eat the plants of the field. 19 By the sweat of your face you will eat bread until you return to the ground, because out of it you were taken; for you are dust, and to dust you will return." (Gen. 3:17-19)

I believe humans were already growing crops by simply scattering seed; therefore, they were getting abundant harvests without much effort. Then after the Fall, "*thorns and thistles*" were introduced. The wording suggests that growing food has now become difficult. But why was this judgment given? When we consider that the judgment upon women was related to their actions with aliens, then perhaps the men saw the tools and said, "*These tools and knowledge will make us more productive and make life easier,*" and so the opposite resulted; man's work became more difficult. Humans must now use the plow, which was given to us by the aliens in order to get the same harvest that was previously received without plowing.

Genesis continues:

"The man has become like one of us, knowing good and evil. And now, he might reach out his hand, and take also from the tree of life, and eat, and live forever" — 23 therefore the Lord God sent him out from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from which he was taken.

But who are the "us" in this passage? It can only refer to God and the angels in heaven. Adam and Eve were not immortal spiritual beings who somehow became fully mortal after they sinned (which many people have actually believed in the past). The text makes it sound as if the humans had not yet eaten from the Tree of Life, and God did not want them to eat from it, or they would become immortal. But that is taking it literally.

The Tree of Life represents a specific tree or plant that the humans ate, which gave them extended lifespans. They were never forbidden to

eat of the Tree of Life, which means they were already eating from it, which allowed them to live a very long time. After they Fell, God did not want them to eat of it any longer, which shortened their lives. According to *The Complete Word Study Dictionary*, the Hebrew word translated “forever” is ‘olâm (5769) and means “*a very long time.*” Noah lived for 950 years, and the average lifespan of those listed in Genesis was 857 years.

When Adam and Eve were expelled from the Garden at the end of Genesis 3, mankind had already multiplied on Earth; then a reference to humans only living 120 years appears in Gen. 6:3, right after it said the sons of God married the daughters of men. So this tells us directly that the lower life spans came when the women married the aliens, which connects back to the Fall in the Garden.

But humans had already eaten many of those plants and trees, which is why those who had already been around for hundreds of years continued for hundreds more; even those born after they were expelled from the Garden. As Gen. 6 continues, it describes the growing wickedness and the Nephilim, who were the giant offspring of the women and Watchers. Though Genesis does not reveal this about the Nephilim, it merely mentions their existence at this point. It is the Book of Enoch that reveals the origins the Nephilim.

## Chapter 6

### The Nephilim – Giants

*The assumption that uninspired ancient books aren't valuable for understanding Scripture is deeply flawed.* – Michael S. Heiser (*Reversing Hermon*, page 5)

#### The Nephilim

This chapter is not an exhaustive treatment of the giants, as there are many books and videos that present the evidence. The information in this chapter is mostly related to giants being created by aliens. Continuing in Genesis 6:

The Nephilim were on the Earth in those days, and also after that, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. (6:4)

The wording of this passage could lead you to believe that the Nephilim were on Earth before the sons of God came down, but Gen. 6 is a very condensed version of the story and not a good one at that. It is clear from 1 Enoch that the giants were the offspring of the Watchers and humans.

Some scholars believe the word *Nephilim* means “Fallen ones” in Hebrew, but “giants” in Greek. Dr. Heiser makes a good case for the root word to mean giants:

The spelling of the word “Nephilim” provides a clue to what root word the term is derived from. . . . If the word came from the verb *naphal*, we’d expect a spelling of *nephulim* for “fallen.” . . . My view is that the Jewish scribes adopted an Aramaic noun: *naphiyla* -- which means “giant.” When that word is pluralized in Hebrew, you get *nephiylim*, precisely what we see in Numbers 13:33. (Heiser, *Reversing Hermon*, p. 16-17)

But the Bible does not provide many details about these giants, but merely shows that they did exist and the Israelites did battle with them.

The details are in Enoch:

3 And the women became pregnant, and they bare large giants, whose height was three thousand cubits (ells). 4 The giants consumed all the work and toil of men. And when men could no longer sustain them, the giants turned against them and devoured mankind. . . . and to devour one another's flesh, and drank the blood. 6 Then the Earth laid accusation against the lawless ones. (1 En. 7:3-6)

Destroy all the spirits of lust and the children of the Watchers, because they have wronged mankind. (En. 10:15)

It is difficult to see how normal-sized women could give birth to giants, but I do not believe that an alien-human offspring would be a giant, merely a taller-than-normal half-human/half-alien being. Some races of ETs are only 4-5-feet tall, but a few are 7-9 feet tall, such as the reptilians and mantis creatures. Therefore, I propose that they intentionally tampered with the DNA to produce the giants that were over 10 feet tall.

Giants have various features making them strikingly different from humans. For example, they had a propensity for being cannibals, and some had two rows of teeth. The ancient texts do not tell us *directly* that the Watchers used DNA to engineer giants from humans and aliens, because no humans during the past 4000 years understood DNA.

An important reference on this subject is from the book of Jasher. It reports that the rulers (i.e., the aliens) not only produced giants but also caused the mixture of animals with humans, which is impossible through normal reproduction:

And their judges and rulers went to the daughters of men and took their wives by force from their husbands according to their choice, and the sons of men in those days took from the cattle of the Earth, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the air, and taught the mixture of animals of one species with the other, in order therewith to provoke the Lord; and God saw the whole Earth and it was corrupt, for all flesh had corrupted its ways upon Earth, all men and all animals. (4:18) (1887 edition)

You cannot mix vastly different animal species unless you are manipulating DNA in a lab. It was reported in 2011 that UK scientists had successfully and secretly created human-animal hybrids for the purpose of scientific research (gulfnews.com). Now, if humans can do it, you know that the advanced aliens can do it better. In early 2022 humans successfully transplanted a genetically modified pig's heart into a man.

The pig's heart was modified to function more like a human heart and reduce rejection.

A fragment from the Book of Giants found in the Dead Sea Scrolls said:

When the fallen angels came, they brought great sin upon the earth. Using the secrets of heaven that they knew, they killed many people and animals and begot giants. (1Q23 Fragment 9, 14, 15)

The secrets of heaven refer to the aliens' advanced knowledge.



Carvings on the Black Obelisk of Shalmaneser III, 9<sup>th</sup> century BC.

I do not believe that humans were able to produce the creatures featured in the above carving in the 9<sup>th</sup> century BC. The carving was either created to immortalize stories from their past, from before the Flood, or the aliens had returned. They are still doing it today. I refer to the dog-man and moth-man, which are no mere legends; I have seen a video of a dead dog-man, which likely was hit by a car or truck.

The present-day alien-human breeding that is taking place does not result in giants. Thousands of women have reported being abducted and impregnated when they were not even having sex with a human. Then, after about 2 months, the baby disappears. There are many books

and videos out that document this breeding program. (A summary of aliens and their agenda is given later.)

Based on all the evidence we have, most aliens do not give birth like humans, but it is all done in a lab, and babies are grown in pods until full gestation. This is apparently why they have no problems taking a 2-month-old out of a woman.

Notice that in the passage from Enoch 10 above, the giants ate humans and even each other. We have evidence of this in history. The giants eventually spread throughout the world, and were in North America before the Native Americans. The myths and oral histories of the natives describe giants that correspond with the descriptions in 1 Enoch. One Native story goes like this:

A long time ago, before the oldest tribe was created there lived giants to the North of Wisconsin where it's always cold. Called the *Wonga-Rouskah-Podarouhuh-Poruh-Wah-Roughe-a-ga*, their name means "those who eat people and have hearts of stone. They were cruel. So cruel, the legend says, that they had ice in their stomachs. . . ."

Tales of giants were not confined to eastern tribes; western Indian nations also had their stories. Piute, Pawnee, and Shoshone legends, as well as stories from the Pacific Northwest, all tell of a race of giants. (*Sons of God Daughters of Men*, Malkowski, page 30-31)

The author also recounted a legend of the Piutes he found in, *Life Among the Piutes*, by Sarah Winnemucca (c. 1844-1891):

[A] savage tribe of 2,600 strong lived near their land along the Humboldt River in Nevada. According to the legend, this tribe had a taste for human flesh. Not only did they dig pit traps on trails to catch their human prey, they also ate their own and would exhume recent Piute graves. The Piutes simply referred to them as the "people-eaters."

Occasionally they made war on the Piute. Their women would carry away those that were killed from either side. . . . One time, several of these cannibals were taken as members of the Piute tribe but they could not be civilized. (Ibid, page 32)

The Piutes eventually killed all those giants. Such was the fate of the giants in North America, but some were still around when the early European explorers first arrived, such as Sir Francis Drake. DeSoto even did battle with some giants.

Malkowski reported that the giants used a type of divining rod called a "pointer," which directed them where to find game. One Native American grabbed one of the rods that a giant had laid down, at

which the giant offered a trade; he would give them knowledge of medicinal roots in exchange for it. The Native agreed; he returned to his tribe and became a doctor (Ibid, page 29). This story fits exactly with Enoch 7:2 above. The giants were also known to abduct native women; then centuries later, the natives began abducting white women.

The bones of giants have been found on all continents. Many newspaper-reports still exist from the 1800s of giants being unearthed across the US, before the bones were taken by the government and disappeared. A few decades ago, some giant bones were located in a museum about 75 miles from Lovelock Cave in Nevada, where the bones were found over 100 years ago, but have since disappeared.

L. A. Marzulli interviewed Robert Mirabal, a Pas Pueblo Native American. Robert spoke about giants and aliens:

"It's an old story from my tribe. To us there's no mystery. There's no huge mystery. . . . It's not a big deal to us, there was a time when giants roamed the Earth and we believe this. . . . Were there a race of people that came from the stars? Yes, we believe it. . . . There is no proof from an anthropological view point. I can't prove any of this happened. . . . They -- the star people -- are all going to show up when the time is right.

"A few of us believe there were giants here. Everybody knows the story. To us they are true. . . . We have stories when men would go hunting and the giants would look into your eyes and know if you were telling the truth. . . . The indigenous people have the stories of the giants [but] they have always stayed low-key because we know they are going to come back." (*On the Trail of the Nephilim* (L. A. Marzulli YouTube channel))

The ancient stories say that some giants could read the minds of humans. This is just further evidence that they were part alien, since modern aliens are known for reading thoughts (more on this later). Even modern Bigfoot experts believe those creatures can read thoughts. Are the Bigfoot creatures merely one species of giant that has survived?

Some people claim that the ETs returned after the Flood and created the giants again; thus, we read that David and the Israelites fought giants. Although they have reappeared many times throughout history, they did not repeat the same Genesis 6 situation of creating more giants. How the giants survived the Flood will be explained in the next chapter on Noah's Flood.

The reason God told the Israelites to wipe out the Canaanites is because they were Nephilim. Even after the Israelites conquered the

land, there were still giants living there, as seen in the story of David and Goliath. They also inhabited nearby regions:

. . . we saw the children of Anak there. (Numbers 13:28)

BDB says the word *Anak* means, “*progenitor of a family, or tribe of the giant people in Canaan.*” The Israel Bible Study Center says:

The Hebrew word *Anak* ענק means “giant.” Therefore, the Hebrew text literally says, “We saw giants.” ([https://lp.israelbiblicalstudies.com/lp-ibbs-biblical-hebrew-biblical\\_giants\\_1221-en.html](https://lp.israelbiblicalstudies.com/lp-ibbs-biblical-hebrew-biblical_giants_1221-en.html))

The Amorites and King Og of Bashan (Jos. 12:4) were also giants. Bashan was the area where Mt. Hermon is located, where the Watchers came down in the Book of Enoch.

### **The Ascended Masters**

There is only one place in 1 Enoch that the term “*holy Watchers*” is used, and it cannot be a description, because they were clearly Fallen beings; therefore, it must be used as a name or form of identification, like “*sons of God.*” We can see in 1 Enoch that the giants were about to receive the judgment of God:

And now, the giants, who are produced from the spirits and flesh, shall be called evil spirits on the Earth, 9 And shall live on the Earth. Evil spirits have come out from their bodies because they are born from men and from the holy Watchers, their beginning is of primal origin . . . (15:8-9)

But what about the fact that it clearly says the giants were the offspring of “*spirits and flesh*”? Does this say angels have sex organs and can impregnate humans? No, angels are just balls of light that take on the shape of humans when they appear; therefore, it cannot literally mean that spirits impregnated women. Again, it is not going to say aliens from another planet came down; therefore, it tells us who they originally were: they were originally holy angel spirits. So Genesis called them *sons of God*.

Because of the above passage in Enoch, many people understand that the demons of today were the giants who lived before the Flood. However, few people know that the Watchers also died and now help Satan in his war against God here on Earth. They are the ascended masters of the New Age movement.

Enoch was instructed to deliver the verdict to the Watchers:

And Enoch went and said: ‘Azazel, you shall have no peace: a severe sentence has been passed against you that you should be bound: (1 En. 13:1)

Notice that the Watchers were to be “bound.” When the Watchers heard their sentence, they asked Enoch to ask God for “*forgiveness and forbearance*” (13:6). Enoch later returned with the answer:

Your petition will not be granted. From here on you shall not ascend into heaven again for all eternity, and you will be bound on Earth for all eternity. (14:5)

I see this statement about not ascending into heaven as not being able to leave Earth in the afterlife when their physical bodies died. Those Watchers are the Fallen angels who are now helping Satan rule Earth. Now read what Jude said about them:

And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day. (v6) (KJV)

Notice that the aliens who came to Earth and led the humans astray are chained in darkness. It does not say that they are in hell or even somewhere way off in the spirit world. As it turns out, these angels are still powerful, even though they are bound to particular locations on this planet. They are the “*principalities, and powers,*” “*the rulers of the darkness of this world,*” and “*spiritual forces of evil in the heavenly places*” (Eph. 6:12). Some are bound in literal caves in different countries across the world. There is even practical evidence for this!

One lady who is deep into the spiritualism of the New Age described encountering one such being who can only be one of these Fallen angels. Regina Meredith told her story in a YouTube video called, *Earth's Pre-Flood Civilization, People of the Serpents, and Orion – Home of the Gods*:

Having lived in the SW a while, I happened to end up in this one particular place, it was a [Native American tribal] ceremonial cave. And there was this amazing being who had been there throughout history, throughout their history. And was still there, it was kind of sad. I walked in, my friend and I, she was also very intuitive, we walked in and we felt like we walked into, you know, one of those wormholes in a sci-fi film; you could feel the resistance, almost placidly. We walked through it, then this voice started speaking to us. And it turns out, that this being has been there all along after the departure and subsequent other tribes that had arrived there and come and gone. And now tourists. . . . And yet this amazing being still is there for anyone who has the ability to tune into him. And you ask for help and help is given.

This is a territorial spirit that has authority over demons to give them orders to do this or that. These are also the “wisdom keepers” who speak to the New Age channelers. But you might ask, didn’t Peter say they are in hell?

For if God did not spare the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell and delivered them into chains of darkness to be kept for judgment; (2 Peter 2:4)

The Greek for hell is *tartaroō* (5020) and literally means “Tartarus” which is believed to be a “*subterranean region, doleful and dark, regarded by the ancient Greeks as the abode of the wicked dead.*” It has become associated with hell but is not actually hell. CWD says:

The subterranean abyss of Greek mythology where demigods were punished. It is mentioned in the pseudepigraphical book of Enoch as the place where fallen angels are confined. It is found only in its verbal form in 2 Pet. 2:4 meaning to cast into or consign to Tartarus. . . . These angels are being held in this netherworld dungeon until the day of final judgment.

Notice that the ancient spirit that spoke to Regina was located in a “cave,” which is a subterranean dark place. The “placidly” she walked through to get to the spirit is a kind of spiritual force-field; this is what holds that spirit prisoner until the Day of Judgment; humans can walk through it, but not that Fallen angel. Poor Regina had no idea she was communing with one of the original Watcher-Fallen angels.

Now, why would anyone want to follow one of those spirits when they could instead follow God himself? It is because they have rebellion down deep inside of them, but the Gospel is still being preached around the world, and many are being saved every day!

Genesis said:

These are the generations of Noah. Noah was a righteous man, blameless in his generation. Noah walked with God. (Gen. 6:9) (ESV)

A few modern translations change it to say he was a righteous man among his family. But since it is speaking about his genealogy, I prefer “*perfect in his generations*” (KJV) which could mean he was not a hybrid. Perhaps it says this because Noah was actually accused of being a hybrid (covered in the next chapter).

## Chapter 7

### Noah's Flood

*The Bible in fact, tells us that the past is the key to the present, and the Flood is key to understanding . . . not just the geology, but even the humanity. Understanding the Ark and the Flood is very relevant to understanding why the world is the way it is today. — Dr. Terry Mortenson, (The Ark and The Darkness, film)*

We have learned how Fallen angels caused the Fall of humanity, and how the aliens created giants who corrupted the world with violence and other evils. As a result, God sent Noah's Flood to kill off the giants and wicked humans; therefore, I believe that discussing the Flood is relevant. However, I will not recount all the details of the Flood here, but only what is relevant to this book.

#### The Genesis Flood

The story of Noah is mytho-history, which is history written from a particular point of view and presented with selected evidence. *Eridu Genesis*, the Sumerian Epic of Creation, is considered the first written account of the Flood story. Supposed experts want us to believe that because it is older than Genesis, it must therefore be more accurate. Yet, there are several reasons why this is not the case. One reason is that many lines are missing from the broken cuneiform tablets. Another is that, because it was written down on clay tablets, it is probable that Moses never personally read the story; therefore, he most likely heard it told by travelers. I would imagine the oral story would not have been exactly as written in the Sumerian texts.

Another point we should correctly understand is that the Flood occurred long before it was ever written down. And we have learned that the Ancient Near East did not write factual history, but mytho-history; therefore, the Sumerian version was written to fit into the Sumerian

belief system. And last but not least, Moses was able to actually hear from God and write what he received through divine inspiration. Therefore, those who want to dismiss Genesis and claim it was merely a revised version of older stories have no solid ground to stand on!

It is my contention, based on all the evidence, that Noah's Flood did not cover the entire Earth 23 feet above the highest mountain, which is what you get by taking what the Bible says at literal face value. Before I discuss the Flood, here is a summary of the account in Genesis to refresh your memory:

- \* Noah had 3 sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth (these three had a wife)
- \* Earth was corrupt and full of violence
- \* God commanded Noah to build an Ark
- \* God brought the Flood to destroy all life
- \* Noah brought two of all living creatures onto the Ark
- \* He also brought every kind of food to be eaten
- \* God shut the door
- \* Noah was 600 years old when the Flood came
- \* All living things not in the Ark died in the Flood
- \* The waters covered the Earth for 150 days, then the water receded
- \* Noah sends out a raven and a dove to look for land
- \* Noah left the Ark and offered a sacrifice to God

## **The Whole World of the Bible**

It is necessary to establish a sound basis for determining the correct interpretation of the Flood and many other events. This information goes along with the above description of mytho-history.

There is a major problem with Bible interpretation today, because much of it is being taken at 100% face value, especially prophecy, when it should not. I use the literal method of interpreting Scripture, which is the only sound method. But what Bible scholars do not understand is that even though a passage is not symbolic, that does not mean the passage is entirely literal at face value. Problems arise when we treat many statements as being completely literal.

I will prove that many statements in the Bible are not 100% literal. Especially such terms as "*whole world*" do not refer to the entire globe. Here are just a few such passages:

Moreover, all countries came to Egypt to Joseph to buy grain, because the famine was so severe in all the lands. (Gen. 41:57)

All the Earth came to Solomon to hear his wisdom, which God had put in his heart. (1 Kings 10:24)

Are we to believe that people from the entire planet went to Egypt to buy grain? Did emissaries from every nation on Earth seek Solomon's wisdom? Certainly not. Neither does it refer to the known world. Here are more examples:

In those days a decree went out from Caesar Augustus that the entire inhabited Earth should be taxed. (Luke 2:1)

"Look, the world has followed Him!" (John 12:19)

Are there any readers who actually believe that all people on this planet were taxed by Rome? Likewise, the entire planet did not follow Jesus while he was on Earth. Not even all the Israelites followed Jesus. So these examples prove that there are many statements in the Bible that cannot be correctly understood at 100% literal face value. Therefore, when the Bible speaks of the "*whole world*" or the "*whole Earth*," it merely refers to many nations surrounding Israel, or just a large number of people.

Here are a few other examples. Daniel 4:22 says the king's dominion had reached "*to the ends of the Earth*." Did Nebuchadnezzar rule China? No. Only a few decades later, the Media-Persian Empire conquered Babylon, which was literally right next door. Yet, some people still insist that the future Antichrist will rule the entire planet. No, all indications suggest that he will not.

Some people who lack understanding to interpret Scripture claim that the 10 horns of Revelation will only rule for one hour with the beast, a literal 60 minutes, because that is what it says in Rev. 17:12:

"The ten horns which you saw are ten kings who have received no kingdom yet, but they will receive authority as kings for one hour with the beast."

This verse means that there is a set time for these events to be completed, and they will not last for centuries or even decades. I hope you can understand that taking every word in the Bible literally can lead to incorrect conclusions about its meaning. We can now better understand what the Bible says about the Flood.

## Old Testament Comets and Asteroids

It is my belief that the most likely cause of the Flood was one or more large asteroid impacts. Scientists have discovered over 150 impact sites, with more being found. Many sites remain undiscovered because of topographical changes caused by erosion, earthquakes, etc.

A Christian book provides surprising scientific evidence to support the belief that comet impacts not only caused Noah's Flood but also destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah and several other events in the Old Testament. *The Comets of God*, by Jeffrey Goodman, explains why even secular scientists believe that comet and asteroid impacts are mentioned in the Bible.

Goodman shows that some words in the Bible can be translated differently, thus providing compelling evidence that God sent many comets and asteroids to bring destruction during that period of history. He says an alternate translation of "windows" or "floodgates," is "*those that lie in wait.*" An alternate translation of "opened" is "*loosed.*" So, rather than saying, "*the floodgates of the heavens were opened,*" it could say, "*those that lie in wait in heaven were loosed.*" This phrase refers to God sending comets to Earth to accomplish his purposes.

Core samples from the Indian Ocean show that there was a huge comet or asteroid impact that created a crater 12,500 feet under water, which likely caused Noah's Flood. Goodman said:

The recently discovered Burckle Crater on the Indian Ocean floor is the proverbial "smoking gun" for cosmic impact causing the Flood and it is proof positive that a comet impact can cause tsunamis with consequent floods. (*The Comets of God*, p. 419)

That is, if the Flood occurred 2500-3000 BC, which it did not. This impact could have merely caused regional tsunamis. After reading his book, I discovered a passage in the Book of Enoch that also appears to say that comets were used to bring the Flood. An angel speaking to Enoch about the coming Flood said:

"In those days the punishment of the Lord of spirits will go out, and the containers of water which are above the heavens, and the fountains which are under the Earth, will be opened. . . . All the inhabitants of Earth will be wiped out." (Enoch, Chapter 54, Nyland) (Chapter 53:7 in Lawrence)

Comets are believed to have brought all the water to Earth, so the "*containers of water which are above the heavens*" must be comets. The Lawrence translation says, "*receptacles of water.*"

Goodman states that there are some verses in the Bible that mention angels bringing God's wrath, but "angel" just means "messenger." Some verses describe the messengers of God in such a way that it could refer to meteors or comets (p. 158). For example:

He gave over their cattle to the hail and their flocks to thunderbolts. He let loose on them his burning anger, wrath, indignation, and distress, a company of destroying angels. (Psalm 78:48-49) (ESV)

In this context, a group of *destroying messengers* could be the fragments sent out from a cosmic impact.

While some references in the OT about cosmic impacts are not very clear, and some are marginally clear, others are very clear, such as the time when Israel's enemies were destroyed by falling stones from heaven:

As they fled from Israel on the downslope from Beth Horon, the Lord hurled large hailstones down upon them from the sky as far as Azekah. They died, and in fact more died from the hailstones than the children of Israel killed with the sword. . . .

The sun stood still in the middle of the sky and did not set for about a full day. 14 There has not been a day like this either before or after it, when the Lord obeyed a man, for the Lord waged war for Israel. (Joshua 10:11, 13-14)

Goodman said there could have been a large cosmic impact far from Israel that sent the stones just at that time, and that the object could have impacted "*at just the right angle and direction and force to temporarily interrupt or suspend the normal daily rotation of the Earth*" (*The Comets of God*, p. 175-176).

According to the *Book of Jasher*, this event killed many kings and people, which suggests a rain of meteors from a large impact:

8. The sun and moon stood still in heaven, and you stood in your wrath against our oppressors and commanded your judgments over them.

9 All the princes of the Earth stood up, the kings of the nations had gathered themselves together, . . . 10 . . . you destroyed them in your anger, and . . . 12 You poured out your fury on them, . . . and cut them off in their wickedness. . . . 15 The Earth trembled and shook at the sound of your storm over them, you did not withhold their souls from death, and brought down their lives to the grave. . . . 17 Their carcasses were like rubbish cast out in the middle of the streets. (Lumkin, *The Encyclopedia of Lost and Rejected Scriptures*)

The book of Judges contains another passage that claims the stars

of heaven engaged in combat with Israel's enemy:

From the heavens the stars fought, from their courses they fought against Sisera. (Judges 5:20)

Question: How could heavenly bodies fight against an earthly king?

Answer: By sending down burning rocks or hailstones. How many of us, casually reading the Bible, have read this next passage but did not notice its significance?

"Have you entered the treasures of the snow? Or have you seen the treasures of the hail, which I have reserved against the time of trouble, against the day of battle and war?" (Job 38:22-23)

Goodman points out that this likely refers to the Oort Cloud just outside the solar system, where trillions of comets reside. It seems to be saying that God occasionally sends a comet to Earth to destroy armies, which appears to have happened several times, as noted above.

There are also prophecies in the Bible indicating that God will send meteors as part of his end-time judgment, such as during the destruction of Gog and Magog in Ezekiel 38:

And I will rain upon him and upon his troops and upon the many peoples who are with him, an overflowing rain and hailstones, fire and brimstone. (Ezekiel 38:22)

"Brimstone" is often translated as "burning sulfur." Whenever an asteroid impacts, there is always the smell of sulfur gas in the air, which is toxic. The impact of a comet will have the same result as that of an asteroid; it will explode and send out smaller pieces of itself that are on fire. A comet can burn because it contains flammable gases. The book of Psalms says:

Upon the wicked He will rain coals of fire and brimstone and a burning wind; this will be the portion of their cup. (Psalm 11:6) (MEV)

The hail and fire of Ezk. 38 happen at the same time as the events of the 7<sup>th</sup> Bowl of Wrath, "*Great hail, about the weight of a hundred pounds, fell from heaven upon man*" (Rev. 16:21). (A hailstone that weighs 100 pounds (45 kilograms) is about 18 inches in diameter.)

Now, you might say that meteors and asteroids are not hailstones; true, but an asteroid can actually send down hailstones if it impacts a body of water. The water is thrown into the upper atmosphere, where it freezes and rains down as hail.

The Dead Sea Scrolls (4Q370) also speak of a large earthquake at the time of the Flood:

So the Lord judged them according to all their practices, according to the designs arising from their [evil] hearts. He thundered against them in [His] might, [so that] the very foundations of the Earth were shaken. (Wise, *The Dead Sea Scrolls: A New Translation*, page 419)

The Maurice Simon translation of the Babylonian Talmud (1948), refers to comets or asteroids impacting to cause the Flood:

When the Holy One ... wanted to bring a flood upon the world, He took two stars from Khima and brought a flood upon the world. (Tractate Brakhot)

*kîymaḥ* is a Hebrew word (3598) that is translated *Pleiades* three times in the OT. Though it is not Scripture, it shows what many Jews historically believed about the Flood.

### **Other Flood Myths**

Where did the people come from that are mentioned above who tell us of ancient horrific disasters? According to the Young Earth theory, there were not even any people on the planet in 7500 BC. In fact, the universe had not even been created. Yet, several ancient flood stories have similarities to the Genesis Flood.

The Sumerian flood myth called the *Eridu Genesis*, is widely believed to be older than the Genesis account; therefore, it is considered more accurate by secular scholars. They even claim that the Genesis account was adapted from the Sumerian account, but there are several things wrong with their claims.

For one, an account being older does not make it more accurate; it could very well contain much more mythological information, like the Indian account (see later in this section). This oldest flood story, from Sumeria, is often confused with the Akkadian/Babylonian flood story.

The oldest copy we have of the *Eridu Genesis* is dated to about 1600 BC and states that the gods Anu and Enlil ordered the Flood, so Enki warned Ziusudra (Noah), which means *Life of long days*, to build the Ark. Ziusudra was also the king of Shuruppak. After the waters recede, he offers sacrifices to the gods, just like Genesis relates.

Here is an excerpt from the *Eridu Genesis*:

More and more animals disembarked onto the Earth.  
Ziudsura the king prostrated himself before An and Enlil.  
An and Enlil treated Ziudsura kindly [. . .]\*  
They granted him life like a god,  
They brought down to him eternal life. At that time,  
because of preserving the animals and the seed of mankind,

they settled Ziusura the king in an overseas country,  
in the land of Dilmun, where the sun rises [. . .]\*

\* Here there are approximately 39 lines missing. (*Eridu Genesis, The Sumerian Epic of Creation*, YouTube, by Study of Antiquity and the Middle Ages channel)

The *Epic of Gilgamesh* came next and was written between 2100–1200 BC; it has several similarities to the Genesis account, but in this epic, Noah's name is Uta-napishti.

O man of Shuruppak, son of Ubartutu:  
Tear down the house and build a boat!  
Abandon wealth and seek living beings!  
Spurn possessions and keep alive living beings!  
Make all living beings go up into the boat.

In this account, the craftsmen who built the boat are also on it, and the boat is clearly square. Perhaps the craftsmen are Noah's sons. Uta-napishti and his wife were given immortality, which Gilgamesh desired but was unable to acquire. This account is lengthy, with much detail not found anywhere else. It reads more like a typical myth, so it must be mytho-history. Two similar points with Genesis are sending out birds and offering a sacrifice. It is interesting that Gilgamesh seeks a plant that will provide him with immortality, but a cunning serpent steals it from him.

Gilgamesh is described as very strong and about 15-17 feet tall; therefore, statues depict him as a giant. His father was said to be human, but his mother was a goddess (either an alien or at least a Nephilim). But the real surprise here is that Uta-napishti was Gilgamesh's ancestor!

The Akkadian/Babylonian account is called the *Epic of Atrahasis* (*Atra-Hasis*), and is used to promote the idea that the Sumerian gods are aliens and the creators of humanity. It officially dates to about (1646-1626 BC), though the story it contains is much older. Longman and Walton comment on this epic:

Time passes after the creation of humanity, and their population grows. The resultant "noise" disturbs the great gods, particularly the god Enlil. After trying other means to reduce the population, Enlil then decides to wipe out humanity by means of a flood. (*The Lost World of the Flood*, page 55)

Notice that the gods first try other forms of destruction before sending the Flood, which included disasters such as famine, and agrees with the Indian version.

Gilgamesh stone relief, from the Assyrian Palace of Sargon II. He is not holding a baby lion, but fully grown. (image: Jastrow, Wikimedia.org)



This was all we knew of Ancient Near Eastern Flood myths until 1985, when a cuneiform tablet was brought to the British Museum. Dated to about 1700 BC, Dr. Irving Finkel recognized that it contained another Flood story, but it was not until 2009 that he was able to translate it, now known as the Ark Tablet. However, unlike Noah's Ark, the tablet clearly says the boat is round and made of rope and bitumen, but it would have been so large it could not possibly stay together. The back of the tablet says "two by two," which is precisely what Genesis says. This version has Noah being named Atrahasis.

Dr. Finkel said that a cuneiform map of Babylon points to mountains to the northwest, which include Ararat. Finkel tells us what is written on the back of the artifact, then comments:

If the adventurer, understood, if you cross this water all the way to the other side, and start to climb the mountain, you will see something, it says, whose wooden . . . [sic] are as thick as a parsiktu. . . . Now the thing is this, . . . in this tablet, in this very same tablet, the god Enki, having given the instructions to Atrahasis, every time something is done, he says, I've done what you asked. And when it came to ribs [of the boat], when the ribs were cut and he said, I cut the ribs as thick as a parsiktu in this tablet. And this expression occurs nowhere else in Babylonian literature.

So, in other words, the map of the world, [...] [it] must reflect that if you climb the crags of this mountain you will see the ribs of this boat against the sky which have been there since the ark landed all that time before. And everything has been eaten except the framework. . . . the mountain beyond the edge of the world, where Atrahasis's boat came to rest. Now, if you come down off this mountain, and you cross the water, the first area inside the known world that's to be encountered, is Uratu. And Uratu is the ancient Assyrian name for Armenia . . . (*The Ark Before Noah, Decoding the Story of the Flood, Dr. Irving Finkel, Origins Conference, Megalitho mania UK channel, YouTube, Jan. 18, 2023*)



(image: Dr. Osama Shukir Muhammed Amin, Wikimedia.org.)

First, I want to point out something about the map. Notice the statement on the map, “*the mountain beyond the edge of the world.*” On the map, you can see the lines creating the circle that enclosed their world, and you can see the mountains just beyond the lines. Yes, they are mountains, according to Irving Finkel. This is another piece of strong evidence that the Ancient Near Eastern people saw their own region as the whole world. But still, they knew there were mountains and people beyond that world. I have yet to read an explanation from a scholar on this. Perhaps they had no word for “region” or “territory.”

Finkel is an unbeliever and believes the Israelites learned this story when they were captives in Babylon and then wrote the story of Noah. Of course this is total nonsense. The story is extremely ancient; notice

the underlined words, "*the ark landed all that time before.*" This suggests a very long time ago, even in the former age. To say that the Hebrews had not heard of it in all those centuries until they were in Babylon is unreasonable. All people throughout the region had heard many different versions of the Flood story, to be sure, but it is the version in Genesis that is inspired. Finkel does not like the fact that this new tablet and the map tell us that the boat really did land near Ararat, which Genesis tells us, while the Sumerian, the Akkadian, and the Epic of Gilgamesh do not. Dr. Finkel oddly believes that the Ark landed near the Alps.

It is interesting to notice that the tablet also specifically mentioned that people traveled there and could see the ribs of the ark sticking out of the ground, which shows that people were making journeys to see it. This also means that it could not have been located high up on the mountain, but must have been low enough that people could easily reach it. Genesis does not say that the Ark settled on Mt. Ararat, but on the mountains of Ararat. This suggests that it was on one of the lower hills. You can likely see Ararat from where the boat landed.

The Ark Tablet was only made about 1,700 BC, but could have been a new copy of an older broken one. If the Flood occurred when Young Earth Creationists believe, 2,300-2,400 BC, then the tablet was written only about 500-600 years after the event. However, I believe the Flood took place 9500-10,800 BC.

Since the tablet said people had been traveling there to see the Ark, this means the Ark being located near Mt. Ararat was not invented by Moses but had been known about long before Moses.

Another Babylonian Flood account was written by historian Berosus about 280 BC, likely based on the above sources, but may have included sources that are now lost. Though there are some differences from the Genesis account, it is so close that it must include the account of Noah. Unfortunately, we no longer have his *Babyloniaca*, which was a history of Babylon. However, what we have contains at least part of his Deluge account. He calls Noah yet a different name, Xisuthrus:

In the second book was contained the history of the ten kings of the Chaldeans, and the periods of the continuance of each reign, which consisted collectively of an hundred and twenty sari, or four hundred and thirty-two thousand years; reaching to the time of the Deluge. . . .

After the death of Ardates, his son Xisuthrus reigned eighteen sari. In his time happened a great Deluge; the history of which is thus described. The Deity, Cronus, appeared to him in a vision, and warned him that

upon the fifteenth day of the month Dæsius there would be a flood, by which mankind would be destroyed. He therefore enjoined him to write a history of the beginning, procedure, and conclusion of all things; and to bury it in the city of the Sun at Sippara; and to build a vessel, and take with him into it his friends and relations; and to convey on board every thing necessary to sustain life, together with all the different animals; both birds and quadrupeds, and trust himself fearlessly to the deep. . . . He then obeyed the divine admonition: and built a vessel five stadia in length, and two in breadth. Into this he put every thing which he had prepared; and last of all conveyed into it his wife, his children, and his friends.

After the flood had been upon the Earth, and was in time abated, Xisuthrus sent out birds from the vessel; which, not finding any food, nor any place whereupon they might rest their feet, returned to him again. . . . He made a trial a third time with these birds; but they returned to him no more: from whence he judged that the surface of the Earth had appeared above the waters. . . . Xisuthrus then paid his adoration to the Earth: and having constructed an altar, offered sacrifices to the gods, and, with those who had come out of the vessel with him, disappeared . . . .

[M]oreover that the place, wherein they then were, was the land of Armenia. The rest having heard these words, offered sacrifices to the gods; and taking a circuit, journeyed towards Babylonia.

The vessel being thus stranded in Armenia, some part of it yet remains in the Corcyræan mountains of Armenia; and the people scrape off the bitumen, with which it had been outwardly coated, and make use of it by way of an alexipharmic and amulet. And when they returned to Babylon, and had found the writings at Sippara, they built cities, and erected temples: and Babylon was thus inhabited again. (*Ancient Fragments*, I. P. Cory, 1832. [www.sacred-texts.com/cla/af/af02.htm](http://www.sacred-texts.com/cla/af/af02.htm))

Notice the length of time: 432,000 years equaled 120 sari, so 1 sari = 3600 years. This resembles the Sumerian King List. It said Xisuthrus (Noah) ruled 18 sari (3600x18) which would be 64,800 years. Even if it referred to months, it would be 5400 years; therefore, it must be an exaggeration. However, it could actually refer to days: 64,800/365=177.5 years. The part about Noah being translated into heaven was likely a confusion; they heard the story of Enoch being translated and applied it to Noah, who was the great-grandson of Enoch. Notice also that it mentions people traveling there and taking away pieces of the Ark.

Several other historians quote Berossus. Here is what Josephus said about the Deluge; notice his reference to other historians:

After this the ark rested on the top of a certain mountain in Armenia . . . However, the Armenians call this place (Apobatêrion) The Place of Descent; for the ark being saved in that place, its remains are shown there by the inhabitants to this day. . . . Now all the writers of barbarian histories make mention of this flood and of this ark; among whom is Berosus the Chaldean . . .

Hieronymus the Egyptian, also, who wrote the Phoenician Antiquities, and Mnaseas, and a great many more, make mention of the same. Nay, Nicolaus of Damascus, in his ninety-sixth book, hath a particular relation about them, where he speaks thus: "There is a great mountain in Armenia, over Minyas, called Baris, upon which it is reported that many who fled at the time of the Deluge were saved; and that one who was carried in an ark came on shore upon the top of it; and that the remains of the timber were a great while preserved. This might be the man about whom Moses, the legislator of the Jews wrote." (*Josephus*, Antiquities I, iii 5-6)

Josephus tells us he knew about several other accounts of the Flood with an Ark. Notice also that the location of the Ark is said to be on the mountains of Armenia, which is accurate with the best evidence we have today. Notice that Nicolaus claimed that many people had fled to the mountain where Noah landed, and were also thus saved. This is a little-known source that directly said there were more survivors than Noah and his family. Unfortunately, the writings of Nicolaus are also lost.

Abydenus, about 200 BC, references Berossus and adds some insight about the Tower of Babel:

They say that the first inhabitants of the Earth, glorying in their own strength and size, and despising the gods, undertook to raise a tower whose top should reach the sky, in the place in which Babylon now stands: but when it approached the heaven, the winds assisted the gods, and overthrew the work upon its contrivers: and its ruins are said to be still at Babylon: and the gods introduced a diversity of tongues among men, who till that time had all spoken the same language: and a war arose between Cronus and Titan. The place in which they built the tower is now called Babylon, on account of the confusion of the tongues; for confusion is by the Hebrews called Babel. (*Ibid*)

His statement, "*the first inhabitants*" and "*strength and size*," suggests that the Tower was built by giants. However, biblical chronology places it after the Flood. Therefore, perhaps it means the Tower was built by those first inhabitants who survived the Flood.

Statements by Josephus and Eusebius confirm the above. Josephus said the Tower was built by Nimrod in case God sent another Flood,

“he would build a tower too high for the waters to be able to reach” (Bk 1, Chp. 4). And Eusebius said:

Eupolemus in his work *On the Jews* says that the Assyrian city of Babylon was first founded by those who were rescued from the Flood. They were giants (and) built the recorded Tower. When it collapsed due to the action of God, the giants dispersed over the whole Earth. (*Preparation For The Gospel (Praeparatio Evangelica)* Book 9, chp. 17)

This directly tells us that many giants survived the Flood and then built the Tower of Babel, which agrees with Berosus.

The Greeks have several versions of the Flood myth, which is highly mythical. Prometheus created humans from clay, but Zeus did not want humans to have fire, so Prometheus stole it from heaven and gave it to humans (like the Watchers who gave knowledge to humanity). Then humans began to suffer from disease, become violent and wicked (also like the Watchers of 2 Enoch). Therefore, Zeus (or Jupiter, depending on the version) sent the Flood. Deucalion was the son of Prometheus; Prometheus warned Deucalion (Noah) that Zeus was planning to destroy the world in a Flood.

The only survivors were Deucalion and his wife Pyrrha, known for their good deeds and uprightness, and their boat landed on Mt. Parnassus. They then threw stones over their shoulders, which became men and women. Deucalion and Pyrrha then became their rulers. Their own two sons were Amphictyon and Hellen; Hellen was the father of the Greeks, called Hellenes.

Some Native American tribes have Flood myths:

The notion of cataclysmic destructions of the world by flood or fire, often with a concomitant falling of the sky, is frequent in West-Coast myth. Indeed, many of the creation-stories seem to be, in fact, traditions of the re-forming of the Earth after the great annihilation, although in some myths both the creation and the re-creation are described. . . .

They created a man and a woman, presumably to become the progenitors of the next world-generation. Then upon the Earth that was [the pre-Flood world] they caused rain to fall:

“Every day it rained, every night it rained. All the people slept. The sky fell. The land was not. For a very great distance there was no land. The waters of the oceans came together. Animals of all kinds drowned. Where the water went there were no trees. There was no land. . . . The waters completely joined everywhere. . . . Human beings and animals alike had been washed away. . . . There were neither clouds nor fog, nor

was there a sun. It was very dark. . . ." (Gary, *The Mythology of All Races*, Vol. X, p. 221-222)

They did NOT derive their beliefs of an ancient cataclysm from Noah's story, because it appears they actually lived through the event. Here is another report from natives:

The Flood was the result of a volcanic eruption accompanied by a violent earthquake, and whenever there is an earthquake the natives rush to the high mountains. They are afraid that after the earthquake the sea may again drown the world. (*New Larousse Encyclopedia of Mythology*, p. 445) (Quoted in, *Atlantis Beneath the Ice*, Flem-Ath, p. 47)

Although this flood could have been a separate event, I have already mentioned that a volcanic eruption likely took place at the time of the asteroid impacts, and all impacts cause earthquakes.

Rand and Rose Flem-Ath reported the findings of 19<sup>th</sup>-century researchers regarding the reason the Inca built the mountaintop city of Machu Picchu:

For the Inca, the threat was not nuclear, but rather a Great Flood. To meet this danger, they created bases on mountains far from the ocean. If another deluge was unleashed, a base like Machu Picchu could repopulate a drowned world. (*Flem-Ath, Atlantis Beneath the Ice*, page 49)

It appears that the main purpose of Machu Picchu was to survive any future flood. The Celts also feared a future cataclysm that must have included a deluge:

The Celts did not dread earthquakes or high tides, which, indeed, they attacked with weapons; but they feared the fall of the sky and the day when fire and water must prevail. (Gray, *The Myths of All Races*, Vol. 3, p. 12)

Why do many ancient myths include a tale of the sky falling? We may think it is *ridiculous*, but the sky falling refers to massive amounts of rain for many days, resulting in a devastating flood.

The above information suggests that the Flood was indeed global, with survivors in all lands; therefore, the Flood did not cover all dry ground around the world. This allowed for the repopulation of the different races and cultures.

One of India's sacred books, *The Matsya Puranam*, contains the story of a flood that was the final part of a series of destructive events that began with a "*dire famine*." One of the gods tells the Hindu Noah, named Manu, what is going to come:

After that, all the inferior beings of the universe would be scorched to death by the seven ordinary rays of the sun which shall become seven times more powerful.

In addition to all that, the subterranean fire would shoot out, Sesa, from his abode in the lower regions . . .

Thus the three worlds would be crumbled to ashes by the combined fury of all those various fires. The sky, with all the stars and planets, would also be destroyed by the heat thus originated.

Then the seven destructive clouds . . . and would rain in torrents till all the seas become united into one great mass. In fact the whole Earth would be covered with one vast expanse of water, then get hold of that yonder boat and put the seed of creation and the sacred Vedas in it. After that, fasten the boat to my horn by means of this rope that I give you, and then contents of the barge will be saved by my glory. . . . (chapter 2:6-15) (*The Sacred Books of The Hindus*, Edited by Major B.D. Basu, I.M.S., Vol. XVII, Part 1, The Panini Office, Bahadurganj, 1916, p. 6-7)

Manu is a title, like Patriarch. His actual name was King Satyavrata. In Hindu Sanskrit, *nu* means *boat*. Hindu historians have stated that the present age of Kali-Yuga began in February 3102 BC. Modern Hindu scientists have used references to planets to calculate the date to Feb. 18, 3102 BC (*Beginning of Kali yuga- when did Kali yuga start?* <https://thegaudyatreasuresofben gal.com/>). This could be the actual date of a major flood in India; perhaps it refers to tsunamis that were caused by an impact in the Indian Ocean, but likely happened long after Noah's Flood. Then Noah's Flood story became merged with their more recent one.

Hindus believe that Manu began the caste system. It also provides evidence that many more people than 8 Indians survived this flood. Why would someone create a caste system in a society with only 8 people in it? And why would that caste system exist only in India? In this account, all 8 were males, so how did the human race continue? It seems that one year after the flood, a woman rose up from the water who was the "*daughter of Manu*," and the human race continued. Considering the above information, it is highly probable that they did in fact experience a major flood that wiped out many cities, but also had thousands of survivors. As time went by, the Indians heard the story of Noah and blended it with their own flood memory.

DNA evidence suggests that the Australian Aborigines descended from India. If the Flood destroyed all humans except Noah and his family, how did the people in India originate and then migrate to Aus-

tralia? And do all this within a few years? Both of their histories go back before the Flood and continues after the Flood. How could they have this history if they all came from Noah's family? They did not come from Noah; they survived the Flood.

### Noah's Ark

The Early Church Fathers also spoke about the Ark and confirmed its location in the western region of Armenia, currently part of Turkey. Bishop Epiphanius of Salamis said:

Do you seriously suppose that we are unable to prove our point, when even to this day the remains of Noah's Ark are shown in the country of the Kurds? (Montgomery, *The Quest for Noah's Ark*, p. 77).

Do not the mountains of Armenia testify to it, where the Ark rested? And are not the remains of the Ark preserved there to this very day for our admonition. -- John Chrysostom (Ibid, p. 78)

In the mid-20<sup>th</sup> century, several people discovered a boat-shaped structure outside Durupınar, Turkey, that many believe is Noah's Ark. Ron Wyatt began exploring the area in 1977. Significant evidence suggests that this is Noah's Ark.

(credit: Mfikretyilmaz, Wikimedia.org.)



He claimed to have found two large tombstones with carvings on them, a large altar, and an anchor

stone. However, some investigators have failed to corroborate some of his claims, leading to a significant body of literature criticizing his findings. But it is likely that the Turkish government may have removed the tombstones.

The reason no wood can be seen on the surface of the boat shape is likely twofold: one reason is that many people took pieces of the boat as souvenirs, and the other is its great age; any exposed wood not taken away would have deteriorated. However, Ground Penetrating Radar (GPR) detected an object just below the surface, which Ron was permitted to excavate, and it turned out to be a chunk of petrified decking timber.

The anchor stone was found 19 miles from the Ark. Notice the many carved crosses, indicating that early Christians often visited it.

Many people have also misrepresented and outright lied about the results of his investigations. Even after Ron's death, the research has continued with more GPR scans and more advanced scans ([noahsarkscans.com](http://noahsarkscans.com)).

Other claims of having discovered the Ark up on the mountainside remain unproven. I believe the best evidence points to the boat-shaped area as being accurate.

The newest piece of evidence comes from the 1587 map of Urbano Monte (below). It shows Noah's Ark near Armenia, and it must have been accessible to many visitors for it to have been included on the map.



(Credit for the image goes to David Rumsey Map Collection, David Rumsey Map Center, Stanford Libraries, [www.davidrumsey.com](http://www.davidrumsey.com). And Jimmy Corsetti @BrightInsight6 on X.)

The Book of Enoch contains a section about Noah that states the Earth tilted over before the Flood came, along with a massive earthquake. Noah asked his great-grandfather, Enoch, about the tilt:

In those days Noah saw that the Earth became inclined, and that destruction approached. . . . And Noah cried with a bitter voice. Here me; here me; here; three times. And he said, 'Tell me what is transacting upon Earth; for the Earth labors, and is violently shaken.' Surely I shall perish with it.

After this there was a great agitation on Earth, and a voice was heard from heaven. I fell down on my face, when my great-grandfather Enoch came and stood by me. He said to me . . . A commandment has gone forth from the Lord against those who dwell on the Earth, that they may be destroyed; for they know every secret of the angels, every oppressive and secret power of the devils . . . Go, for I have asked the Lord of Spirits respecting this agitation on the Earth; who replied. On account of their impiety have their innumerable judgments been consummated before me. (Enoch 64:1, 3-4, 6, 9) (Lawrence)

Notice that Noah said Earth became inclined. This is not mytho-history; it clearly said that Earth either tilted or experienced crustal displacement. Therefore, I believe it is highly probable that the following events occurred before or at the Flood, and perhaps more than these events:

- \* Earth tilted and/or the crust slipped, thus moving the North Pole from within Canada to its current position.
- \* This increased temperatures in northern regions, and the ice began melting, which created a huge lake on top of the ice sheet during the time it took Noah to build the Ark.
- \* Then several large asteroids impacted around the world, including Canada, sending out flaming meteorites that ignited many fires. The impacts vaporized much ice and released the water from the giant lake. Some of this water flowed directly into the ocean, some into the Mississippi River, some formed the Great Lakes, and other lakes. The vaporized water caused massive rainfall around the world.
- \* At least one asteroid impacted the ocean, thus causing tsunamis.
- \* The asteroid impacts triggered at least one large volcanic eruption, which contributed to the darkened skies and lower temperatures. The impacts also caused earthquakes.
- \* It is likely that a massive earthquake split the ground, creating the Grand Canyon in the USA, and the meltwater flowed into the canyon, deepening it even further.

\* The sudden melting of the ice, caused by the impacts, along with the lake water, caused the ocean level to rise 50-100 feet rapidly, thereby flooding numerous human cities that existed around the shorelines, and Atlantis.

\* The remainder of the ice sheets in northern regions continued to melt, increasing the ocean to the present-day level, which is 400 feet above the previous level.

## White and Dark Races

The ancient writings indicate that all humans were dark-skinned when the Watchers arrived and that Noah was the first white man. When Noah was born, his father, Lamech, suspected that he might be a Nephilim because he was white. Thus, Lamech feared his wife had cheated on him with a Watcher:

And after some days my son Methuselah took a wife for his son, Lamech, and she became pregnant by him and bore a son. And his body was white as snow and red as the blooming of a rose, and the hair of his head and his long curls were white as wool, and his eyes beautiful. 2 And when he opened his eyes, he lit up the whole house like the sun, and the whole house was very bright. (1 En. 106:1) (Lumpkin)

Lamech went to his father, Methuselah, who went to Enoch for advice. He said Noah, “was in the likeness of the angels of heaven; and now I have come to you that you may make known to me the truth.” Noah was the first white human who was not an offspring of the Watchers. This finding is yet more evidence that many dark-skinned people survived the Flood.

Because of the above passage, some people have claimed that Noah was a Nephilim, but they are grossly mistaken. It is not mere speculation that Noah was not a Nephilim, because 1 Enoch specifically states that he was not an offspring of the Watchers. Enoch said:

And now, my son, go and make known to your son Lamech that this son, which has been born, is in truth his son, and this is no lie. (1 En. 107:2. (Lumpkin)

It is likely that God caused a genetic mutation that caused Noah to be white.

Note: A UFO whistleblower claims that some aliens came to Earth 10,000 years ago and took a group of humans to another planet that is off to the left of Zeta Reticuli, called 82 Eridani, on a star map found in a crashed UFO. These humans developed believing they were native to that planet for 5,000 years; then they were told they came from Earth.

They have developed 5,000 years ahead of humans on Earth and have been visiting us. Supposedly, automation provides for all their needs, so they no longer need to work. There are no wars or crime. This is totally believable, because it proves that humans are NOT prone to violence and wars, as many aliens claim, but it is Satan and his demons here on Earth that are the cause, and because Earth-humans are born Fallen. With no evil on Eridani, they would not have been born Fallen, which means their spirits are good angels. The Eridani humans are allegedly those called Nordics. (*"Government Insider" LEAKS Alien Invasion Plan*, Dec 19, 2025, Area52, YT)

Noah, being the first white man, would have married a Black woman, and his offspring would most likely have been brown. However, there are times when a mixed-race couple will have one black child and one white child. Thus, the Hebrews, being Caucasian, must have descended from his white children. Ham could have been black, not cursed to become black, as some Bible commentators speculate. He is the one who went into Africa. Nevertheless, he could have been white, because his whiteness would have eventually been filtered out over the years.

To understand how Genesis could say that all the people after the Flood were the offspring of Noah, I present this information: Genesis is known to say that so-and-so was the son of someone, when in reality, he was the grandson or even great-grandson. If someone was a mere descendant, he was considered the son of that person. In like manner, having been a student of a renowned teacher also made you the son of that teacher. Irenaeus said:

For when any person has been taught from the mouth of another, he is termed the son of him who instructs him, and the latter [is called] his father. (*Against Heresies*, Book IV, Chapter 41)

Ham is said to have been the father of the Africans. But since it is highly probable that there were many African survivors of the Flood, it merely means that he was a notable progenitor, not the only forebear of the Africans, and likewise with the other sons.

### **Global Population at The Flood**

Young Earth Creationists claim there could have been nearly 4 billion people on Earth at the time of the Flood. For real!

. . . there could have been about 750 million people at the time of the Flood. However, given the extremely long lifespans prior to the Flood,

the growth rate could have been much higher. Increasing the rate by just 0.001 would put the population at close to four billion at the Flood. (<https://answersin genesis.org/noahs-ark/pre-flood-population/>)

This is just crazy nonsense. This would mean the global population went from two people (Adam and Eve) to four billion in only 1,652 years, if the Flood took place in 2348 BC, as *Answers in Genesis* claims! But after the Flood, there were three couples: the three sons of Noah and their wives. They did not live as long, even so, if YECs are right about the pre-Flood population, then the post-Flood population should have been at least 1 billion long before the birth of Christ. Again, utterly absurd. Most estimates say the global population was only 200-300 million during the life of Christ.

In 1,000 BC, the estimated world population was 50 million. How do you arrive at that large number (though much smaller than the YECs estimate), starting out with only three couples, in just 1,348 years? There is no possible way that could have been the case, even with incest involved. Since each of Noah's sons went in different directions, it means their children would need to marry each other, but God did NOT use incest to create the human population.

The evidence tells us that did not happen. The evidence indicates that there were many survivors of all races. Some survived in boats; others were in mountainous regions.

YECs claim they choose to accept the Bible's words at their literal face value instead of science because it can change. It's true that science may discover a way to more accurately date fossils, which would change their official dates. Although written history can also change, it's rare to learn something that is significantly different from already known history, at least in the past 4000 years.

King Ur-Zababa was the second king of the 4<sup>th</sup> Dynasty of Kish, as listed on the Sumerian Kings List. He appointed Sargon as his cup-bearer. Sargon the Great went on to create the Akkadian Empire, the first empire in history. Sargon ruled (c. 2334 – 2279 BC). Can you see a problem here? *Answers in Genesis* says the Flood happened in 2348 BC. Sargon created an empire by joining together 12 city-states:

Such was his fame that some merchants in an Anatolian city, probably in central Turkey, begged him to intervene in a local quarrel, and, according to the legend, Sargon, with a band of warriors, made a fabulous journey to the still-unlocated city of Burushanda (Purshahanda), at the

end of which little more than his appearance was needed to settle the dispute. ([www.britannica.com/biography/Sargon](http://www.britannica.com/biography/Sargon))

The dark brown area shows the empire; the arrows indicate the directions in which Sargon waged military campaigns. Sargon's biography states, "*Sargon, King of the Universe, conquered the totality of the land under heaven.*" (Horowitz, *Mesopotamian Cosmic Geography*. Eisenbrauns, 1998.) Do you suspect that he did not actually conquer the entire known world?

The exact year of Sargon's birth is unknown, but let's estimate that he was 30 years old when he began his empire; this would mean he was born in 2364 BC, 16 years before the official date for the Flood. This indicates that for him to establish an empire just 14 years after the Flood, he and many thousands of others must have survived! However, I don't believe there were tens of thousands of survivors in Mesopotamia; therefore, this means the Flood must have occurred thousands of years before the accepted date.



I agree that the conclusions of archaeologists and historians can be incorrect, but evidence for Sargon's empire is unlikely to be off by thousands of years, which is necessary for YECs to be accurate. And though I believe that thousands of people around the world survived the Flood, I do not believe that a large enough population survived in Mesopotamia to create an empire only a few years later. This information suggests that the Flood occurred thousands of years earlier, likely coinciding with the Younger Dryas impacts, explained shortly.

YECs say, *Don't believe your lyin eyes*; just believe their overly simplistic interpretation of Genesis. Even biblical archeologists, such as Joel P. Kramer, provide evidence against the Flood being late. Because we know the exact date of a solar eclipse that occurred over Nineveh in 766 BC, we can determine, based on information in the Bible, that the Exodus took place in 1446 BC. This means that the Hebrews entered Egypt around 1846 BC, which is a mere 502 years after the Flood supposedly happened, which is not feasible, considering what the population needed to be throughout the Middle East at that time.

This historical information should lead researchers to question the date of the Flood as calculated using only biblical years, but there is even more evidence. The traditions of the Ojibwa tribe go back to the last Ice Age. They are part of the Algonquin tribal group, who call themselves the "First People." They live in the northeastern USA and southeastern Canada. How could they be the result of gradual population growth after the Flood, especially if it took place in 2348 BC? Many different tribes or races believe they existed during the Ice Age.

Just how literal are the actual years given in the OT? In Genesis 6:7-9; 17, we have the number 7 used 10 times

- \* 7 pairs of all clean animals (7:2)
- \* 7 pairs of the birds (7:3)
- \* 7 days I will send rain (7:4)
- \* 17<sup>th</sup> day of the month (7:11)
- \* 7<sup>th</sup> month (8:4)
- 17<sup>th</sup> day of the month (8:4)
- 7 days (8:10)
- 7 days (8:12)
- 27<sup>th</sup> day of the month (8:14)

There are also several periods of 40 years in the OT and NT:

- \* 40 days of rain, at the time of the Flood, Genesis 7:17
- \* Noah sending out a raven after 40 days, Genesis 8:6-7
- \* 40 days for embalming after the death of Jacob, Genesis 50:3
- \* 40 days of fasting by Moses, Exodus 24:18; 34:28; Deut. 9:9, 25
- \* 40 days of fasting by Elijah, 1 Kings 19:8
- \* Spies spent 40 days in reconnaissance in Canaan, Numbers 13:25
- \* Nineveh will be overthrown after 40 days, Jonah 3:4
- \* Symbolism of the siege and exiles, Ezekiel 4:6
- \* Wandering in the wilderness for 40 years, Exodus 16:35; Num. 14:34
- \* 40 years of peace in Israel, Judges 3:11; 5:31; 8:28
- \* Egypt to be desolated for 40 years, Ezekiel 29:11
- \* 40 years for Israel to be restored after, Ezekiel 29:13

- \* 40 days of fasting by Jesus, Matthew 4:2
- \* Christ appears for 40 days after the resurrection, Acts 1:3
- \* 40 stripes given to punishing criminals, Deut. 25:3; 2 Cor. 11:24

Rather than all these exact days or years existing because God likes exact numbers, for whatever reason, I believe that God utilized mytho-history in the Bible. This means those periods of time were likely recorded with those specific numbers for symbolic significance. The truth is in the interpretation.

Even the listing of the genealogy of Jesus in Matthew is clearly not literal because Matthew traces the lineage of Jesus back to Adam through Joseph, even though Joseph was not his actual father. And even though the genealogies in Genesis appear to be complete and literal, scholars tell us they are not. Some scholars believe that the genealogy mentioned in Genesis was not intended as a factual genealogy of any person, even though those people really existed. Walton and Longman III said:

The accounts in Genesis 1-11 can be affirmed as having real events as their referents, but the events themselves (yes, they happened) find their significance in the interpretation that they are given in the biblical text. That significance is not founded in their historicity but in their theology; not in what happened (or even that something did happen) but in why it happened. (*The Lost World of the Flood*, p. 17)

And I will add, how an event happened is also not authoritative. In other words, the events are not an exact historical account but are written for specific reasons, to reveal specific information that God wants us to understand. Walton and Longman later said:

One of the most important types of figurative language used in the rhetoric of the flood narrative is hyperbole. . . . the Bible is not hesitant to describe events hyperbolically . . . the biblical historian can use hyperbole for effect in order to communicate an important theological message. (*The Lost World of the Flood*, page 30, 33)

Dr. Walton does not believe in the Big Bang and evolution, but Dr. William Craig and a few other Bible scholars believe in the Big Bang. I disagree; the Big Bang theory states that the entire universe was created with one huge explosion, and includes the theory of evolution. I believe God created a small section of empty space; however, God created this space, aka, the universe, to be alive the way plants are alive, and it has been creating planets and solar systems for billions of years, which is why the universe is expanding.

You may suspect that the following image is of a brain, but it is actually the universe. Something like this does not occur in dead clumps of dirt and rock floating around. The universe is alive and produces life on viable planets as it was created to do.



### **The Younger Dryas Impact**

During the last Ice Age, global ocean levels were 400 feet lower because all that water was locked up in the great ice sheets that covered Greenland, Canada, and even the northern parts of the USA, Europe, and Russia. Ice also covered large areas in the Southern Hemisphere.



Although the sea level rose gradually over a long period at the end of the last Ice Age, there was also a sudden rise caused by the impact of comets or asteroids. This is called the *Younger-Dryas Impact Theory*. These impacts led to tsunamis and a rapid rise in ocean levels caused by the release of a greater volume of water than Niagara Falls, which flooded the world's coastal cities. After much research, I have con-

cluded that Noah's Flood likely happened at this time. And I am certainly not the first one to come to this conclusion.

As we have learned, the Flood also included a large earthquake and Earth becoming "inclined." Therefore, these events could have darkened the sky for several years and greatly lowered temperatures (explained shortly), which is exactly what happened within the time-frame of the Younger Dryas Impact.

It is surprising that many scientists are still ignoring the evidence that cosmic impacts caused the end of the Ice Age, even though there is a growing body of geological data, as well as evidence from history and archaeology. However, there are a growing number of truth-seeking scientists who now believe this theory. The scientific evidence for this is presented in different books, such as *Cataclysm! Compelling Evidence of a Cosmic Catastrophe in 9500 B.C.* by D.S. Allan & J. B. Delair (1997), and *The Cycle of Cosmic Catastrophes*, by Richard Firestone, Allen West, and Simon Warwick-Smith (2006).

The Younger Dryas Impact Theory is slowly gaining more acceptance. Ice core testing conducted on the Greenland Ice Sheet indicates that an extraterrestrial impact occurred at the end of the last ice age. The ice core study was published on the *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the USA* website:

One explanation of the abrupt cooling episode [in Greenland] known as the Younger Dryas (YD) is a cosmic impact or airburst at the YD boundary (YDB) that triggered cooling and resulted in other calamities, including the disappearance of the Clovis culture and the extinction of many large mammal species. We tested the YDB impact hypothesis by analyzing ice samples from the Greenland Ice Sheet Project 2 (GISP2) ice core across the Bølling-Allerød/YD boundary for major and trace elements. . . .

The impact hypothesis (11), once declared dead (12, 13), recently gained new support from the discovery of siliceous scoria-like objects (SLOs) with global distribution, which provide strong evidence for processing at high temperatures and pressures consistent with a cosmic impact (14). . . .

[the vast amount of evidence] is difficult to explain by anything other than a cosmic impact. . . .

(*Large Pt anomaly in the Greenland ice core points to a cataclysm at the onset of Younger Dryas*, July 22, 2013 [www.pnas.org](http://www.pnas.org))

A more recent reference also supports this conclusion. The abstract says:

The Younger Dryas (YD) impact hypothesis posits that fragments of a large, disintegrating asteroid/comet struck North America, South America, Europe, and western Asia ~12,800 years ago. Multiple airbursts/impacts produced the YD boundary layer (YDB), depositing peak concentrations of platinum, high-temperature spherules, meltglass, and nanodiamonds, forming an isochronous datum at >50 sites across ~50 million km<sup>2</sup> of Earth's surface. This proposed event triggered extensive biomass burning, brief impact winter, YD climate change, and contributed to extinctions of late Pleistocene megafauna. (*Sedimentary record from Patagonia, southern Chile supports cosmic-impact triggering of biomass burning, climate change, and megafaunal extinctions at 12.8 ka*. March, 2019. [www.researchgate.net](http://www.researchgate.net))

Notice that there were multiple impacts; this is important because I contend that an asteroid hit the Mediterranean Sea or the Atlantic Ocean near the Straits of Gibraltar and caused the destruction of Atlantis with Noah's Flood.

The above scientific information shows that a global event occurred and caused massive Earth changes. You might think that the drop in temps should have caused even more ice to form, but the North Pole moved and Earth tilted, and when the massive amounts of the ice-melted and entered the oceans because of the impacts, the currents changed. All the events together resulted in continued melting of the ice sheets.

## Chapter 8

### Ancient Tales of Cataclysm

*Early scholars everywhere recognised that, so far as it was known to them, a great break had occurred in Earth's history, or at least in the human portion of it. The break had been caused by a vast flood, which for Christian and Jewish historians was the Deluge of Genesis, and for classical writers the Great Flood of Deucalion. . . the Universe, though eternal, undergoes cyclical destruction from either fire or water at lengthy but irregular intervals. — Allan & Delair (Cataclysm! page 3)*

Some secular scientists are starting to notice ancient writings that show cosmic impacts bringing destruction to ancient kingdoms. It appears that many more comets moved through the sky 3,000+ years ago than today, resulting in more impacts.

Comets have historically been considered harbingers of the downfall of kings and kingdoms, and it appears, with good reason; comets have actually impacted and caused great destruction. This is likely the cause of humankind's fear of comets. Ancient astrologers were employed to watch the sky for approaching comets and asteroids. There are far too many historical references to cosmic and global disasters to mention them all here, but I will give a few examples.

Just a few decades ago, scientists did not believe those ancient descriptions were genuine accounts of impacts, because they did not believe that such impacts had taken place after the arrival of mankind. However, we now know better because we are finding more impact craters that date to this period. The Amarah Crater in southern Iraq was discovered in 2001 using satellite imagery. The crater was created by an impact about 4,000 years ago, the estimated time of the Tower of

Babel; and could have brought down the Akkadian Empire. (www.telegraph.co.uk, *Comets of God*, Goodman, p. 308).

Victor Clube (Oxford University) and William Napier (Royal Observatory, Edinburgh) were perhaps the first legitimate scientists of the 20th century to write books that documented the worldwide historical references to cosmic impacts (*The Cosmic Serpent* {1982} and *The Cosmic Winter* {1990}). Since we have awakened to the fact that comets and asteroids can impact Earth, those ancient references can now be studied for their scientific information and not simply dismissed as myths or imagination.

Did another large impact take place 2,000 years after the Younger Dryas impact? *Impact! The Threat of Comets & Asteroids* quotes such writers as Edith Kristan-Tollmann and Alexander Tollmann of the Univ. of Vienna in 1992, in a geology journal. Gerrit L. Verschuur:

According to the Tollmanns, something dramatic happened around 7500 B.C. Based on what they claim to have found in the historical record . . . Immediately following a series of impacts, there was a great heat pulse produced by the fireballs. As a result of flood and fire, much of the world was left in ruins. Many of the ancient stories also tell of earthquakes of enormous magnitude. "The crust moved, according to these traditions, like the running high waves of the tempestuous sea, hurled people on their faces, uprooted trees, crushed rocks, broke down mountain crests and raised them elsewhere, changed the landscape and submerged many islands in the Atlantic and in the Indian Ocean." . . . Those parts of the continents spared from floods were deluged with torrential rains that brought mud and soot and acid, which in places turned the rain to a bloody color. "Countless myths report with horror that the evil wolf (Edda) or a pernicious demon devoured the sun, the moon and the stars." (Verschuur, p. 105)



Either there were two massive destruction events, or they merely have the date wrong because it appears to describe the Younger Dryas Impact. The Greenland Ice Sheet study that examined the ice core that existed for the past 50,000 years, said nothing about evidence for another impact in 7500 BC.

One reason that modern scientists are reluctant to accept the idea that comets have impacted Earth in recorded history, resulting in great changes, is because it would validate the Catastrophism scientific theory, rather than Gradualism (also called Uniformitarianism). Catastrophism posits that certain geological changes in Earth's history occurred suddenly, caused by natural events like an asteroid impact or an outburst from the sun, causing mass extinctions of animals and plants.

Gradualism states that everything has changed very slowly over billions of years, which supports the theory of evolution. Catastrophism was the prevailing theory until the mid-1800s, when Gradualism became the dominant view because Catastrophism supported the Bible, i.e. the Flood. Historically, those who hold a particular theory usually die holding that theory, in spite of any updated evidence.

Since there have been many impacts in the past, it is not a stretch to believe that Noah's Flood was caused by such impacts. There are many references in stories handed down by ancient peoples that describe major natural disasters in the distant past. I will not give the full mythological story that the Utes tell of their hare-god; here is the short version:

In that long ago, the time to which all mythology refers, the sun roamed the Earth at will. When he came too near with his fierce heat the people were scorched, and when he hid away in his cave for a long time, too idle to come forth, the night was long and the Earth cold. . . . [one day] the sun was shivered into a thousand fragments, which fell to the Earth, causing a general conflagration. . . . swollen with heat, the eyes of the god burst, and the tears gushed forth in a flood, which spread over the Earth, and extinguished the fire. . . . [then] were established the days and the nights, the seasons and the years, with the length thereof and the sun was condemned to travel across the firmament by the same trail day after day till the end of time. (Powell, Major J. W. "Mythological Philosophy." *Popular Science Monthly*, 15; 1879: p. 799)

We can see this tale describing many burning meteors falling from the sky that set the land on fire. Then a massive rainfall put out the fires. This is exactly what happens when an asteroid impacts a massive 2-

mile-thick ice sheet. It explodes and sends out millions of small, burning meteors. The enormous heat and pressure of the impact will melt millions of tons of ice, while at the same time, it also vaporizes millions of tons of ice, which is thrown into the upper atmosphere, where it falls back down in a massive torrent. Some ancient tales describe it as the sky falling.

Notice also that this event set the present seasons, days, and years, which suggests that before this cataclysm, the seasons, days, and years were different. This indicates that much more than an impact and flood took place; there was likely also a tilting of the planet and crustal displacement as already mentioned.

The Mexican codices say:

“... The pillars of heaven were broken. The Earth shook to its foundations. The sky sank lower towards the north. The sun, moon and stars changed their motions. The Earth fell to pieces, and the waters in its bosom up-rushed with violence and overflowed. . . .

The system of the universe was totally disordered. Man had rebelled against the high gods. The sun went into eclipse, the planets altered their courses, and the grand harmony of nature was disturbed.” (Fray Martin Martini, or Martinus. *Historia Sinensis*. lib. I, p. 12.) (*Mysteries of Ancient South America*, Harold T., 1946. p.31)

This tale is similar to the previous tal, but does not mention fire; instead, it mentions a massive earthquake, the sun going dark, and that the “*planets altered their courses*.” It is not likely that several other planets in this solar system were thrown into different orbits around the sun; it means that, seen from Earth, the planets’ paths around the sun appeared altered. This suggests a tilt of the Earth and/or a crustal displacement.

The narratives of this kind of disaster were woven into mythological-like tales that were handed down through generations. For example, a story might say that the sky god descended and spat fireballs upon them, which we can recognize as flaming meteors.

When the asteroids impacted the ice sheet and released the massive lake that had already formed on top, the water suddenly rushed into Oregon, Montana, and Wyoming, causing significant devastation. This event is called the Missoula Floods (see videos by Randal Carlson). A similar thing likely happened in northern Europe.



The Willamette Meteorite, above, was found in Oregon, and weighs 14,150 kilograms, or 15.60 tons. It is estimated to have impacted 13,000 years ago in Canada but was washed down into Oregon by the flood waters.

Heaven forbid that they assign it the same date as the Younger Dryas impact, but their ability to pinpoint dates is more limited than they will admit. This rock likely is all that remains of one of the YD impact asteroids, because no impact crater was found with it. This means it likely impacted the ice and was then carried south by the Missoula Floods.

Plato was a very learned man who passed along some of his knowledge in his books. He spoke about an ancient cataclysm in his *Statesman*:

. . . the sun and the stars once rose in the west, and set in the east, and that the god reversed their motion, and gave them that which they now have as a testimony . . . [Earth] turns about and by an inherent necessity revolves in the opposite direction. . . . And the world turning round with a sudden shock, being impelled in an opposite direction from beginning to end, was shaken by a mighty earthquake, which wrought a new destruction of all manner of animals. Afterwards, when sufficient time had elapsed, the tumult and confusion and earthquake ceased . . . (<http://classics.mit.edu/Plato/stateman.html>)

This information tells us that a crustal displacement took place and a different rotation of Earth existed in the former age (a crustal displace-

ment is when the entire skin of Earth moves, like rotating a globe of the world, moving a tropical region into an arctic region, or flipping the entire map, as suggested by the sun rising in the west). Modern advocates for crustal displacement assert that massive earthquakes will take place when it happens, which seems probable, based on the ancient records. Plato's words are, of course, ignored as myth by most scientists today.

Most researchers believe that Plato's ancient history originally came from Egypt. Pomponius Mela wrote *De situ orbis libri III* (Description of the World) in the early first century, which was referenced by Pliny in his *Natural History*. Mela wrote:

The Egyptians pride themselves on being the most ancient people in the world. In their authentic annals . . . one may read that since they have been in existence, the course of the stars has changed direction four times, and that the sun has set twice in that part of the sky where it rises today. (Pomponius Mela, *De Situ Orbis* i.9.8.)

In the *Papyrus Ipuwer* it says, "*the land turns round as does a potter's wheel*" and the "*Earth turned upside down.*" (*Papyrus Ipuwer* 2:8, Cf. Lange's German translation of the papyrus (Sitzungsberichte d. Preuss. Akad. der Wissenschaften. 1903. pp. 601-610). (Quoted in *World's in Collision*, Immanuel Velikovsky, p. 119).

If ancient people were smart enough to know that planet Earth rotates, then they were smart enough to know that it turned upside down. The Greeks wrote about actual cataclysms, both in mythical and non-mythical terms, as here:

There a great noise in the Earth, like Zeus's thunder, roared heavily -- it made one shudder to hear it. The horses pricked up their heads and ears to heaven, while we servants were taken with a violent fear at the thought where this voice came from. When we turned our eyes to the sea-beaten beach, we saw a wave, immense and uncanny, set fast in the sky, so great that my eye was robbed of the sight of Sciron's coast, and the Isthmus and Asclepius' cliff were hid from view. And then as the sea-surge mad it swell and seethe up much foam all about, it came toward the shore where the chariot was. With its very swell and surge the wave put forth a bull [roar], fierce and heaven-sent. With its bellowing the whole land was filled and gave back unearthly echoes, and as we looked on it the sight was too great for our eyes to bear. (Euripides, *Hippolytus*, in *Euripides* (trans. D. Kovacs), Harvard Univ. Press: Cambridge, Mass., 1995.) (Quoted in, *Out of Antarctica*, by Argod, page 252)

It is clear to me that the great noise was caused by the impact of an asteroid, followed by a giant tsunami that struck fear into those who saw it. This may be an eyewitness account of Noah's Flood!

Another tale speaks of the sun changing course:

Whither, O father of the lands and skies, before whose rising thick night with all her glories flees, whither dost turn they course and why dost blot out the day in mid-Olympus? . . . What has driven thee from thy heavenly course? What cause from their fixed track has turned aside they horses? . . . Have we of all mankind deemed deserving that heaven, its poles upturn, should overwhelm us? In our time has the last day come? (Seneca, Thyestes in Seneca's Tragedies, Vol. 2. Trans. F. J. Miller. Heinemann, 1917, page 157-163) (Quoted in *Worlds in Collision*, Velikovsky.)

The Kutenai Native Americans in the northwestern USA and southern Canada, look up every night to ensure the North Star is where it should be in the sky. "*Should it not be in place, the end of the world is imminent*" (*Ethnology of the Kutenai*, Turey-High, page 96). The North Star is almost directly above the North Pole, which suggests that the Kutenai are expecting a crustal displacement, or a sudden tilt of Earth.

The Talmud, in Tractate Sanhedrin 108b, speaks of the period of the Flood. Regarding Genesis 7:10, it says the place where the sun rises and sets was changed before the Flood:

. . . "after seven days" means that the Holy One, Blessed be He, altered the order of Creation for that generation, i.e., in seven days He reversed the process of Creation, so that the sun would emerge in the west and set in the east. ([www.chabad.org/](http://www.chabad.org/))

There is a myth told by the Bella Coola River Indians of British Columbia that is similar to the Greek myth of Zeus and Phaethon. The son of the sun desired to carry his father's torches:

Early the next morning, the young man started on the course of the sun, carrying the torches. Soon he grew impatient, and lighted all the torches at once. Then it grew very hot. The trees began to burn, and many animals jumped into the water to save themselves, but the water began to boil. Then his mother covered the people with her blanket, and thus saved them. The animals hid under stones. (Stith Thompson, *Tales of the North American Indians*, Indiana University Press, Bloomington, 1971, p. 44)

Instead of the sun causing the burning, it was most likely a very large asteroid that passed overhead inside the atmosphere, which would have caused it to burn. It likely impacted many miles away.

The ancient Britons didn't describe seeing an asteroid or comet approaching but described the effects of a large impact, including poisoned air. An asteroid impact will literally burn the atmosphere and much vegetation, resulting in poisonous gas filling the atmosphere for weeks:

The profligacy of mankind had provoked the great Supreme to send a pestilential wind upon the Earth. A pure poison descended, every blast was death. At this time the patriarch, distinguished for his integrity, was shut up, together with his select company, in the enclosure with the strong door. Here the just ones were safe from injury. Presently a tempest of fire arose. It split the Earth asunder to the great deep. The lake Lion burst its bounds, and the waves of the sea lifted themselves on high around the borders of Britain, the rain poured down from heaven, and the waters covered the Earth. (*Mythology and Rites of the British Druids*, Edward Davies, London, 1809, p. 226.)

This passage appears to say that a ruler and those with him were secure in a building with a strong door, while those outside died because they were not “just.” But the passage continues and reveals some interesting details:

But that water was intended as a lustration [purification], to purify the polluted globe, to render it meet [suitable] for the renewal of life, and to wash away the contagion of its former inhabitants into the chasms of the abyss. The flood, which swept from the surface of the Earth the expiring remains of the patriarch's contemporaries, raised his vessel, or enclosure, on high, from the ground, bore it safe upon the summit of the waves, and proved to him and his associates the water of life and renovation. (Ibid)

You should be able to clearly see that this refers to Noah and the Flood. The “*strong door*” was on the Ark. Notice that Noah is referred to here as a “patriarch.” This story likely came directly from Noah's Flood account as it spread over many thousands of years since it took place.

It is important to note the poisoned air and fire. This information provides additional evidence to support the belief that a cosmic impact caused the Flood. Now we understand why God told Noah to build the ark to be enclosed, to keep out the poisonous air!

Iceland's ancient myth, the Ragnarök, speaks of a time when there were three winters with no summers, which followed great wars:

First, there is a winter called the Fimbul-winter, when snow drives from all quarters, the frosts are so severe, the winds so keen and piercing, that there is no joy in the sun. There are three such winters in succession, without any intervening summer. But before these are three other winters, during which great wars rage over all the world. Brothers slay each other for the sake of gain, and no one spares his father or mother in that manslaughter and adultery. (Anderson, *The Younger Edda*, page 140)

The major wars, followed by three years without a summer, could have happened after the YD impacts because the skies could have stayed dark that long in some parts of the world. However, that region may have been too ice-covered to have a high population; therefore, this particular event may have happened a few thousand years later.

The first missionaries to Greenland reported what the people believed: (I used Google to translate this from German):

There is also the idea that the Earth turned over in ancient times, so that the people living at that time became underground, and that it will turn over again in the future. . . . [great fiery monsters] . . . used to live on the Earth before the great flood came over the world, and when the Earth turned over, what had previously been pointing upwards came to the bottom. The corresponding idea that the Earth will also capsize in the future . . . (Olrik, Axel, *Ragnarök*, 1922, page 407)

The Polynesians believe their islands emerged after the destruction of the Flood, which could have happened during the Flood or a different historic cataclysm:

The sea . . . arose, and in a stupendous catastrophe of nature the land sank into the sea . . . The new Earth [the Samoan Islands] arose out of the womb of the last Earth. (Williamson, R.W., 1933, *Religious and Cosmic Beliefs of Central Polynesia*, Vol. 1, p. 8. Cambridge) (Quoted in, Allan, *Cataclysm*, page 155.)

Here is an account from the Waccamaw Siouan Indian Tribe in North Carolina, known as the “*People of the Falling Star*”:

Thousands of years ago an immense meteor appeared in the night sky toward the southwest. Flaming to a brilliance of innumerable suns as it hurtled Earthward, the meteor finally struck, burning itself deep within the Earth. The waters of the surrounding swamps and rivers flowed into the crater and cooled it, creating Lake Waccamaw, a gem blue, verdant green lake. (<https://waccamaw-siouan.org/>)

Evidence of asteroid strikes on the East Coast of the US suggests that these strikes could have taken place simultaneously with the impacts of the ice sheet. One of two events likely happened: A large aster-

oid could have impacted the ice sheet, then broken up and sent small chunks to impact many other regions; or a very large comet broke up while entering the atmosphere, resulting in scattered impacts throughout the world.

In conclusion, I have presented numerous sources that tell us that the Flood was much more than high water; it was a planetary cataclysm that included Earth becoming inclined differently from how it had been previously. Yet, those who have studied the ancient megalithic sites tell us that they are aligned with magnetic north or with the summer and winter solstices and the planets — as the world currently is. Or I should say, as it became after the changes that took place with the Flood. This means that all of those sites that are currently aligned must have been built by the survivors of the Flood, likely using pre-Flood knowledge. If they had been constructed before the Flood, they would not be aligned in this manner.

As you can see, there is a great quantity of evidence to believe that many people around the world survived Noah's Flood and that it took place during the period given for the Younger Dryas impacts.

## Chapter 9

### Ancient Aliens

*My conclusion to 'alien life and the Christian' type questions is that it is highly probable that beings other than Angels do exist in galaxies or dimensions 'far, far away'. -- C. S. Lewis (essay 'Religion and Rocketry,' 1958)*

### The Shining Ones

Here is what Isa. 14 says about Satan, in several translations:

How you have fallen from the heavens, O shining one, son of the dawn! (LSV)

"O Day Star, son of Dawn!" (ESV)

"morning star, son of the dawn!" (NIV)

We know that Satan is referred to as a serpent several times in the Bible, from Genesis to Revelation. First, what does the Hebrew word *nachash* (5175), translated *serpent*, actually mean?

E. W. Bullinger defines it:

The Hebrew word rendered "serpent" in Genesis 3.1 is Nachash (from the root Nachash, to shine), and means a shining one. Hence, in Chaldee it means brass or copper, because of its shining. Hence also the word, Nehushtan [Strong's 5154], a piece of brass, in 2 Kings 18.4. (*The Companion Bible*, Appendix 19)

We have a word that is most often translated *serpent*, but also means "*shining one*." Some snakes are dull and drab, but those "*with smooth scales often appear shiny, glossy or iridescent, which may give the appearance of being wet or even slimy*" ([www.reconnectwithnature.org](http://www.reconnectwithnature.org)).

Is being called the "*shining one*" merely symbolism of some type? Or did the aliens who came here have a shiny, serpent-like appearance? There is yet more evidence that they looked like serpents. In the *Dead Sea Scrolls*, the Book of Amram from Cave 4 says:

(9) [... I saw Watchers] (10) in my vision, the dream-vision. Two (men) were fighting over me, saying ... (11) and holding a great contest over me. I asked them, 'Who are you, that you are thus empow[er]ed over me?' ... in his appearance, his visage like a viper, . . . (Manuscript B, Fragment 10, <https://navigatetruth.com/amram>, *Dead Sea Scrolls Uncovered*, Robert Eisenman & Michael Wise, Penguin Books, 1993.)

In *The Legends of the Jews* 1:2, it says:

Among the animals the serpent was notable. . . . Like man he stood upright upon two feet, and in height he was equal to the camel. ([www.sefaria.org](http://www.sefaria.org))

Could the above actually be a reference to reptilians? 1 En. refers to the son of a Watcher named Taba'et, and calls that Watcher a serpent:

. . . the son of the serpent named Taba'et. (1 En. 69:12) (Lumpkin)

As you can see, there are not merely one or two references, but many that point to these Watchers as serpents. We know that Satan is described in the Bible as a serpent; therefore, I suspect that his race did in fact look reptilian.

Tom Horn spoke with a Navajo historian, Dr. Don Mose. Tom related very little of what Dr. Mose said, and only about a sentence of his actual words, but Tom did report:

He then proceeded to tell us the older stories that his grandfather had repeated about these mysterious peoples actually disappearing after they came under mind control from a reptile with a halo . . . (*On the Path of the Immortals*, page 53)

This being can be seen in a petroglyph with arms and legs. Tom Horn gave his assessment of the Anasazi and other tribal legends:

[A]fter much comparison, I propose as reasonably justified a translation of the traditional Indian creation stories together with the Anasazi's petroglyphs as telling:

1. In the beginning, the great creator made everything.
2. Powerful reptilians then came down from Heaven through portals (the spiral, halo, and reptilian symbols) to deceive the world, and the world fell into darkness. . . . (Ibid, page 60)

One of the ancient Vedic myths says that one of the ancient gods wore "*shining armor*" (*Mahābhārata: The Greatest Spiritual Epic of All Time*, by Khishna Dharma. Chapter 8).

## Ancient Reptilians

Some alien skulls are large and round, but others are elongated and could be part human:



(Image credit: Cristina García / INAH. [www.livescience.com](http://www.livescience.com))

The pictured skull was found in a grave discovered in Mexico in 2012, which contained about 25 bodies dating back at least 1,000 years. This was not caused by head binding because you cannot increase the volume of a skull through binding; you can only change its shape. Skulls like the one pictured above have been confirmed to have a much larger than normal volume inside.

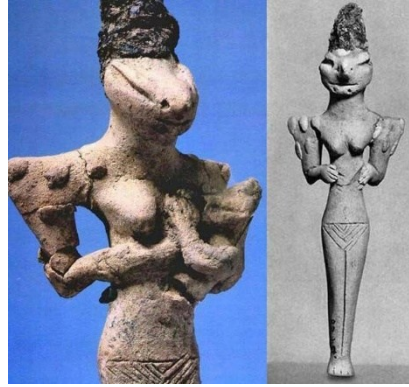
Expert examination of such skulls proves they are not fully human. On these skulls, the spot at the base of where the spine attaches to the skull is farther back by an inch or more, which you would expect with a larger-than-normal head, in order to have proper balance. But this cannot happen when you are born normal and then change the shape of your head through head binding. L.A. Marzulli has a video on his website and YT channel that shows elongated skulls with the hole farther back (*On the Trail of the Nephilim*, [www.lamarzulli.net/](http://www.lamarzulli.net/) Video 6, DNA).

Artifacts and skeletal remains suggest that ETs continued to show up after the Flood and continued to breed with humans. There are ancient figurines from several different places around the globe showing intelligent-looking beings with a reptilian appearance.

These are among the oldest known figures from Mesopotamia (5,000 BC) and are called Ophidian Ubaid figures. Ophidian means,

*“like a snake,”* or *“shape of snake.”* They were made by the people who lived in the area before the Sumerians.

Observe how wide the shoulders are with a slim body, which is like the Nazca mummies (see below). Do the button-like protrusions on the shoulders represent scales? Notice that the clay figure is breastfeeding, which reptiles don’t do, but they could be part human. The fact that the child is also reptile-like indicates the figure is not wearing a mask, as the child would not be wearing a mask while breastfeeding.



Notice that the creatures in this image look similar to the image on the bell in the image below.

A bell was also found embedded in coal in 1944 that had been mined hundreds of feet down. Ten-year-old Newton Anderson was doing his daily chore of filling the basement furnace with coal when he dropped a large chunk on the floor. It broke open, exposing a bell about seven inches tall:



It was bituminous coal from a nearby mine in Upshur County, West Virginia, dated to 300 million years ago. This bell has become well-known among Christians as evidence of life before Noah's Flood, but being hundreds of feet down in a mine, it must be far older than the accepted date of the Flood.

How could the population of the world grow so large in such a short time, from the believed date of Adam to Noah, that it spread into North America? That is highly unlikely. And even if it had, how could an object that would only be 4,300 years old get hundreds of feet down to become surrounded by solid coal in such a short time? Yet, dinosaur bones are being found sticking out of the ground in Montana and North Dakota.

The bell has been studied at the University of Delaware at Wilmington. Later, in 1973, Dr. John Morris of the Institute for Creation Research had the metal tested at the University of Oklahoma. There, a nuclear activation analysis revealed that the bell contains an unusual mix of metals, different from any known modern alloy production (including copper, zinc, tin, arsenic, iodine, and selenium). ([www.genesispark.com](http://www.genesispark.com))

Did you notice anything strange about the face? It does not look human; it actually looks more reptilian! Could the bell be the result of a reptilian civilization on Earth 300 million years ago?

The image on the right is from Sierra Leone, West Africa, discovered while mining for diamonds.



Praveen Mohan is an expert researcher of ancient India, and he came across an ancient carving in a Hindu temple of a creature called the *Anuaga*. He said *anu* means similar to, and *aga* means snake. He outlined the ancient carving so we could see it better (see next page).



Notice the reptilian-like head that resembles the clay figures. If you look close enough, you can even see the slits for an eye and a mouth. Praveen said, “these are the original form of the popular snake gods of India” (*Anunnaki found in Hindu Temple? Ancient aliens in India*, YT, Praveen Mohan channel). The Encyclopedia Britannica said, in Hindu mythology, naga means serpent:

. . . a class of mythical semidivine beings, half human and half cobra. They are a strong, handsome species who can assume either wholly human or wholly serpentine form and are potentially dangerous but often beneficial to humans. ([www.britannica.com](http://www.britannica.com))

Mohan said the creature is called *Anuaga*; another author, without any reference to this Hindu creature, said another way to pronounce Anunnaki is “Annanage” (Malkowski, *The Book of Giants*, page 86). The Anunnaki are the beings who are believed to have come down from heaven to rule Earth, according to the Sumerians. In other words, they are the Watchers.

In an episode of *Ancient Aliens*, on the History Channel, Mohan talked about how he grew up in a strict Hindu family and learned the Hindu scriptures. He said:

Hindu believe their gods came down from the sky. (Season 11, Ep. 15)

This next image is from Panama:



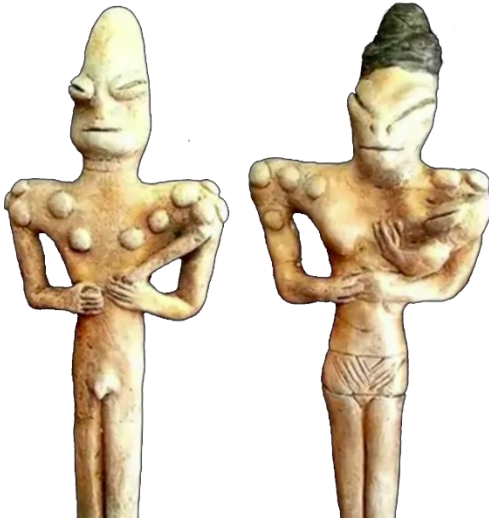
Japan also has ancient reptilian figures. These two figures were on display at the Horyu-ji Temple in Japan until someone noticed that they resembled reptilian beings, and they were removed from public display:



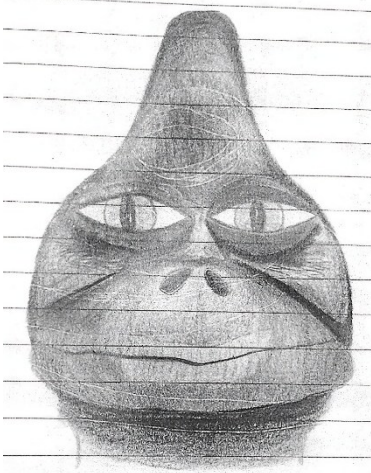
These images are strong evidence that the reptilians lived on most continents with humans, even after the Flood. The original 200 Watchers all died, but more could have arrived.

Most of the reptilians above don't have coneheads, so I assumed the pre-Sumerian conehead was an anomaly or was merely made that

way to hold a hat on it, and that the one on the left (below) was missing a hat. However, perhaps the coneheads are a separate race.



A recent victim of alien abduction drew a picture of a conehead reptilian seen on board a UFO, so they are still around:



Right, is a Greco-Roman statue located on the La Scarzuola Estate in Italy:



Below appears to be a cone-headed reptilian skull that was found in Taxco, Guerrero, southern Mexico, in 2022; shown by Mexican scientist Pablo Enrique Garcia Sanchez:



(<https://mexicodailypost.com/2022/08/08/alien-mummy-found-in-taxco-guerrero/>)

As we saw in 1 Enoch, the Watchers had many different “forms,” which means many different races, some of which may have been the result from breeding between the alien races. If any direct ET offspring (I do not mean Nephilim) survived the Flood, they eventually died out or interbred with full-blooded humans enough to no longer appeared alien. Therefore, it is probable that many humans alive today have some alien DNA in them.

### **The Nazca Mummies**

Look at the images below; these creatures are commonly known as the Nazca Mummies because they were found in a cave not far from the Nazca Lines in Peru. Also called *Tridactyls*, because they have three fingers and no thumb. They were examined by several doctors from Peru and Mexico and described as “humanoid reptiles.” Debunkers want to claim they are fake, but these are clearly not dolls or humans, and the skulls are not the result of skull binding. These creatures have eleven ribs.



The object on the chest is a metal plate of unknown purpose. The objects in the lower body were declared to be “eggs.” Therefore, these beings are not the aforementioned reptilian that was breastfeeding. They are also small.

Several different species of beings were found together; some are full-sized but with heads shaped like the typical gray alien. Full examinations are being conducted, including DNA tests and CT scans. Carbon-14 tests show them to be 1,500-2,000 years old.



One of the larger ones, originally named Maria, has been recently renamed Mario after the discovery of the male gene. He was declared to be a human-alien hybrid. Dr. Ricardo Rangel, a molecular geneticist, said that one expert in the human genome did a very in-depth analysis on the mummy and found evidence of:

“technological use to do cloning, to be able to artificially insert genes into Maria’s genome . . . cloning victors in Maria’s genome that shouldn’t be there. . . . [Mario] had to have been genetically created.” (video June, 2024) (Translated from Spanish using AI.)

The above evidence, along with the carvings and paintings on rocks and pottery with beings with three fingers, indicates that they existed

on several continents of Earth for at least several hundred, perhaps thousands, of years. This carving is in Utah:



One of the giant Nazca lines shows a three-fingered creature.

We also have evidence of round-headed, large-eyed beings who are likely grays. Large-eyed beings have been showing up for a long time, as seen in this ancient cave painting:



Aboriginal rock art of the Mowanjum people, Australia.  
(Image: Graeme Churchard, Wikimedia.org)

## Two Reptilian Rocks

I personally found the reptilian head on the left (on the next page) on Google Earth in the southwestern USA. It looks similar to other reptilian looking rocks in various parts of the world. These are millions of years old:



### Ancient Aliens Returned

The image on this ancient Sumerian cylinder seal, VA-243, was created by rolling a carved cylinder onto soft clay and then baking it. It has some important and surprising information to tell us:



Sumerian scholars have translated the writing on the seal to merely refer to a person, the seal's owner, and "*your servant.*" Therefore, they have concluded that the image cannot depict astronomy or planets. But that is faulty reasoning. Though the words don't mention astronomy or planets, the image can be showing them. The words are not there to describe the contents of the seal or interpret its meaning. A wise person once said, *A picture is worth a thousand words*; therefore, the information in the image can indeed relate far more than the words.

Below the cosmos symbol, there appear to be a dagger, a club, and

a scepter. Most people agree that the large figure on the right is a god who is handing a plow to two earthly kings. Some say they are lesser gods, but divinities would not need a plow, and I doubt that they would be bringing an offering to the higher god (the individual on the far left appears to be holding a goat).

I interpret the seal this way: knowledge of the cosmos, warfare, and kingship have already been given to humanity, so now the god is giving humans the knowledge of farming. This interpretation agrees with 1 Enoch, which tells us the Watchers came down and taught us primitive humans all about astronomy, warfare, agriculture, etc.

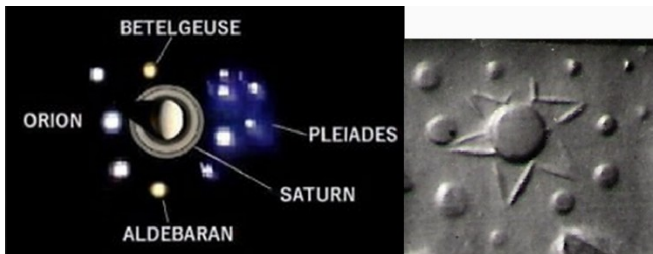
Researchers and scholars argue it shows the sun surrounded by planets, while others, such as Michael Heiser, claim the Sumerians represented the sun differently, that it just represents a star, and the dots represent different star systems like Pleiades. I will just refer to it as the cosmos symbol.

Heiser said:

The Pleiades are actually one of the most frequently depicted astronomical features in Sumero-Mesopotamian art.

One fellow online provided his analysis of the cosmos symbol, along with this image:

My name is Emerson C Velloso, and this is my archeoastronomy contribution to Professor Michael S Heiser: The man seated is Ninurta, he's not only the God of the Farmers and Plow, he is also the God of War, related to the planet Saturn! The big star in the center is Saturn.



Ninurta was indeed a god of war and agriculture in Sumeria. If you inquire about Saturn directly, there is little information; however, the Sumerians depicted Saturn as a star named Kajamanu, “*the constant one*.” It was also known as Lubat-saguš or Uduimin-saguš in Sumerian, translating to “*star of the sun*.” It was also the star connected to Ninurta. If the person in the image is Ninurta, then this could certainly be Kajamanu, a.k.a., Saturn.

If this is Saturn, it means they had great knowledge of the cosmos. Where did they acquire this advanced knowledge?

Back in the 1980s, Dan (Crain) Burisch worked with one of two aliens that survived a crash in 1952. Dan said the being was ill with a condition related to the very genes of his DNA and that his race of beings was looking for a cure (several YT videos).

This tells me that these super-smart beings are not really as smart as they think they are, because their genetic tampering has caused a problem that they cannot fix by themselves. It also means that these beings did not create humanity in ages past, or they would certainly be able to fix their DNA issue.

These beings, called J-Rods, claimed to have been on Earth in the ancient past:

J-Rod 52 revealed to Burish that his alien race had actually inhabited Earth many thousands of years ago, before being forced to leave. The reasons for their mass departure were many. They included a great global catastrophe caused by massive solar flares, a violent shift in Earth's poles, and extensive crumbling of the planet's crust. (*Beyond Area 51*, Mack Malon, page 16-17)?

This means that the beings who are depicted in the Sumerian clay rolls could very well be these J-Rod beings. Even though the Watchers were killed in the destruction, these beings were able to leave Earth. Therefore, they were not numbered among the 200 that originally brought knowledge to humanity. They likely showed up after the Watchers caused the Fall.

You may wonder, why is it then that the Sumerian roll depicted J-Rod beings and not reptilians? The Sumerian roll was created many thousands of years after the actual event took place and even thousands of years after the destruction that caused the J-Rods to flee Earth. Therefore, it is likely that the J-Rods had returned during the time of the Sumerians and told them how a group of advanced beings had provided knowledge to humanity many years before.

The J-Rods may have even done a similar thing with the Sumerians, because humans may have lost much of the knowledge they had before the Flood; therefore, we may be seeing a second transfer of knowledge in the roll.

## Historical UFO Evidence

Throughout history, there have been many reports about, and paintings showing, orbs or UFOs in the sky, which indicates that such objects were frequently seen. One of the first recorded sightings of unknown objects in the sky occurred in 218 BC, when:

. . . . . in Rome there would be a spectacular appearance of navium [ships] shining in the sky, and again in 173 BC in the Lanuvius sky would appear a large fleet. (UFO in Ancient Rome, by M. L, 2016; [www.romeandart.eu/en/art-ufo-rome.html](http://www.romeandart.eu/en/art-ufo-rome.html))

Another mention of this sighting said, “*phantom ships had been seen gleaming in the sky*” (Titus Livius (Livy, *The History of Rome*, Book 21, chapter 62: [www.perseus.tufts.edu/hopper/text?doc=Perseus:text:1999.02.0144](http://www.perseus.tufts.edu/hopper/text?doc=Perseus:text:1999.02.0144)).

Two tapestries portray objects being seen in the sky during medieval battles. A 12<sup>th</sup>-century book, “*Annales Laurissenses Maiores*,” documents an extraordinary event that occurred in 766. When the Saxons raided the Franks in the siege of Sigiburn castle, the Franks were able to secretly leave the castle and attack the Saxons from the rear. Then witnesses saw two shields in the sky that appeared to hover over the church, as though showing they were coming to aid the Franks, “*the Saxons become so frightened that they all turned and ran*” (*Ancient Artists Left Signs For us to Decode. Did they Witness UFOs*, [www.ancient-origins.net](http://www.ancient-origins.net)). One translation says the shields were “flaming,” but another merely says “reddish color”.



The image on the left above clearly depicts a typical UFO shining in the sun, while the second depicts an orb, or UFO, in flight. According to one source, the French prayed for divine intervention; then the objects stopped over the church. Were these UFOs some of the good guys? I do not believe that all aliens are evil, any more than I believe that all humans are evil.

The *London Daily Mail* reported in 1952 that the first known UFO sighting in England was in 1290:

Flying saucers are by no means new. . . . Documents relating to Byland Abbey, Yorkshire, dated 1290 tell of a round, flat sliver object like a discus which flew over the monastery, exciting, the report says", maximum terrorem "among the brethren. (Britain Saw the First 'Saucers'--in 1290, J. Stubbs Walker, *Daily Mail*, London, 2/10/1954)

## Britain Saw the First 'Saucers'—in 1290

THEY are not called flying saucers any more, since Government Departments have been investigating these fascinating phenomena at high level. The saucers have been officially named U.F.O.s—Unidentified Flying Objects—by the British Air Ministry. Their meaning may be accepted as a measure of the official interest now being taken in a strange which

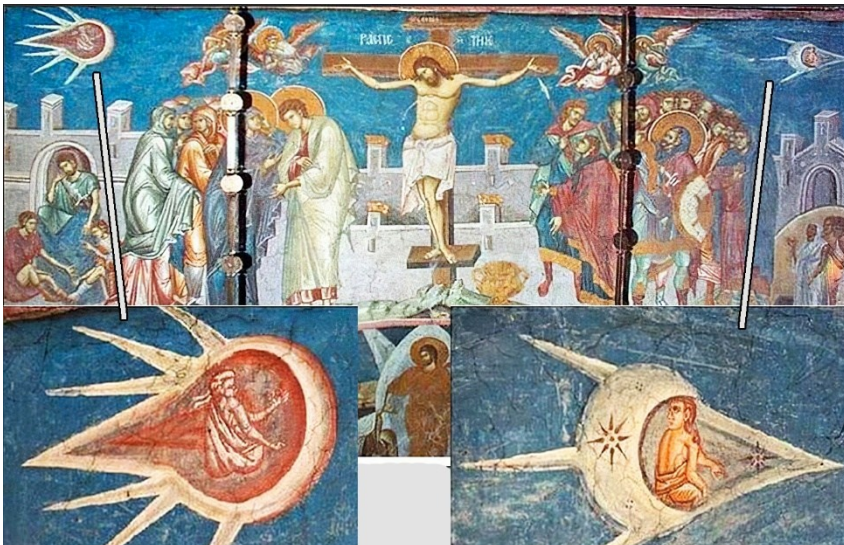
by J. STUBBS WALKER

Forces have been warned that detailed reports of sightings must be given to intelligence departments. The result of these inquiries is producing almost as much controversy as the flying saucers themselves. A American official source, while not flatly turning down the theories of visitors

nial Intelligence section of the Air Ministry. Remember that the Air Ministry have not denied the existence of flying saucers; they have merely indicated that of the several hundred cases investigated 95 per cent. have an explanation. Of the other five per cent. "doubtful," some, at least, are so lacking in detail that full inquiry cannot be made into them.



The Visoki Decani Monastery, of the Orthodox Church, near Deçan, Kosovo, was constructed 1327-1335. It contains paintings such as the Crucifixion of Christ, painted 1350.



The top half of the image above shows a man inside two different glowing craft, which are shown larger in the bottom half. The image suggests that people believed the craft had human pilots. Perhaps the people of that time believed that angels, or perhaps deceased people, watched over us in those objects. It has been reported several times, and I have seen videos myself, of UFOs so close that you can see individuals looking out through the windows. Did they actually see beings inside flying craft?

We are told that the UFO-looking object in the next image (right) is supposed to be Elijah being taken up to heaven in a chariot. However, the object is clearly being portrayed as coming out of the clouds.



The above image is located in "*Israel, put your hope in the Lord*," Monastery Church, Sighisoara, Transylvania. Built in the 13<sup>th</sup> century, it was badly damaged by fire in 1676, which is the likely date of this painting.

It also just happens to resemble an object on this coin or token which also looks very much like a UFO:

The people of that era clearly saw objects in the sky that can only be UFOs, because no humans had airships in 1656. The only airships that existed then were UFOs.



In 1803, a strange vessel that measured about 15 feet wide washed ashore in Japan. Inside was a young woman, about 18-20 years old, with red hair. The vessel was made of metal and had strange markings on it.



Illustration from Bakin Kyokutei's *Toen shōsetsu*, 1825.

The incident was recorded in at least 12 different Japanese sources. The craft had strange hieroglyphic-like letters on it, seen in the upper right of the image. The girl could not communicate with the people, which tells me she could not use telepathy, which is the way all aliens communicate. (Telepathy does not need translation, so it must bypass a certain part of the brain.) The people put her back into the vessel and sent her back onto the water.

Now, if I were to analyze this incident, I would ask how this young woman was in the craft by herself. Knowing how the aliens like to tamper with human DNA and interfere in many other ways, I suspect that the aliens abducted this woman from somewhere on Earth, or even another planet with mostly human-like beings. They put her in the craft and dropped her off near the shore of Japan to be discovered. They hoped the people would adopt her and provide her with a husband; thus, her DNA would have entered the Japanese race.

Notice the appearance of the hieroglyphic writing and compare it to this more recently recovered object believed to be from a UFO; they are not exactly the same, but are closer to each other than to a modern alphabet:



There are also some strange tales of ancient China that appear to describe aliens. Here is one such story:

In the third year during the reign of the Chen King, there were visitors from Ni Li country to the courts. These people claimed that they had vehicles that can fly in the clouds, swim in the waters. They were also able to tell the fate of the confederated kingdoms by the sun and the moon, and calculate weather through the seasons. (Zhe, *Aliens and UFOs in Ancient China*, page 185)

There have been many recorded historical sightings from many countries of strange objects in the sky, but I am only giving a brief account here.

## Chapter 10

### Modern Aliens

*Of course it is possible that UFO's really do contain aliens as many people believe, and the government is hushing it up. -- Stephen Hawking*

### Twentieth-Century Aliens

I will only mention a few documented accounts for those who have not been paying attention, and that fit well into this book.

One of the first reptilian-connected modern reports comes from Herbert Shermer, who was a 22-year-old Ashland, Nebraska, police officer in 1967 when he was abducted by aliens who were 4.5 to 5 feet tall. Described as slightly reptilian:

The entities had slightly slanted “catlike” eyes (that didn’t blink), gray-white skin, long and thin heads, with flat noses and slitlike mouths. They wore silver-gray uniforms, gloves, and helmets (which had a small antenna on the left side around their ear), and at the left breast of each suit they had the emblem of a winged serpent. (Police Officer Herbert Schirmer Abduction, [archive.org](http://archive.org))

If you wonder if this is a truthful report, consider the year. Who would report that an alien had a winged serpent on his chest back in 1967? No one connected winged serpents with aliens back then.

According to Leonard H. Stringfield, author of *UFO Crash Retrievals*, the Roswell crash in 1947 was not the first craft recovered in the USA. Leonard literally spent several decades collecting information on UFOs from many people within the military who saw crashed vehicles and dead bodies. At least dozens of craft with bodies have been recovered, including some beings still alive.

Because of the length of time that has passed, we also have death-bed confessions by people who said they were part of the crash retriev-

als. One fellow said he saw “*the preservation of dead alien bodies under glass in special refrigerated condition*” (Springfield, page 19) at Wright-Patterson Air Force Base in Ohio. In 2025.

On social media, someone reported finding the following photo among their deceased father's belongings. I do not know if the man in the photo above was the father or if he took the photo:



Sometimes an alien is referred to as an Extraterrestrial Biological Entity, or EBE. Here is a photo of two EBEs that were supposedly captured by the US Navy after their UFO crashed back in the 1950s or 60s:



Notice how they almost have no nose, and no ears. Now look at these other photos of an EBE that is either a different race or benefits from having more human DNA in it because it has a small nose and lips. This being is called Skinny Bob.

The images of Skinny Bob are from a video that Ivan0135 first released online in 2011. The video was taken secretly when Skinny Bob supposedly met the Russian leader or KGB back in 1961. The video has never been proven fake.

In the video, you can see the ET walking and making normal movements and even blinking. If you look closely, the EBE does not have large black eyes, as it may appear, but only slightly larger than human eyes; however, it has a large black area around the eyes. The black area around the eyes might be natural or might be makeup. Perhaps they think it enhances their beauty. Notice that Bob has fingernails that appear to be painted black. Also notice that the hands have three fingers and one thumb. His brain must be at least twice that of a human.



Skinny Bob is said to be from the Zeta Reticula star system.

Four EBEs were recovered in the Roswell, 1947, crash; three were alive (John Lear, UFO researcher), and one was still alive as of 1987.

In 1954, President Dwight Eisenhower is alleged to have disappeared on the night of Feb. 20, while on vacation in Palm Springs, CA. He reportedly needed to have emergency dental care. But whistleblowers claim that he was secretly taken to Edwards Air Force Base, where he met with aliens of two different races.

A treaty was supposedly made in which the aliens would provide the US with a certain amount of technology, and in exchange, they would be allowed to abduct people to obtain DNA and fetuses. This is supposedly the reason the US has firmly ignored the harm these alien abductions are causing humans, though they likely cannot do anything to stop the abductions.

There are reportedly dozens of alien races on Earth, or at least visiting Earth. Here are the most frequently reported ones:



(David W. Chace, *A Visual Guide to Alien Beings*, 1995)

## Orbs

Silver UFO orbs are being seen around the world and videoed; some are black, and a few are described as being like a jellyfish. They have been seen for decades. Here is a newspaper clipping from 1954:



Some are the size of a bowling ball. A security camera captured one as it smashed into a parked truck at high speed. It bounced off and kept going, leaving a hole in the cab:



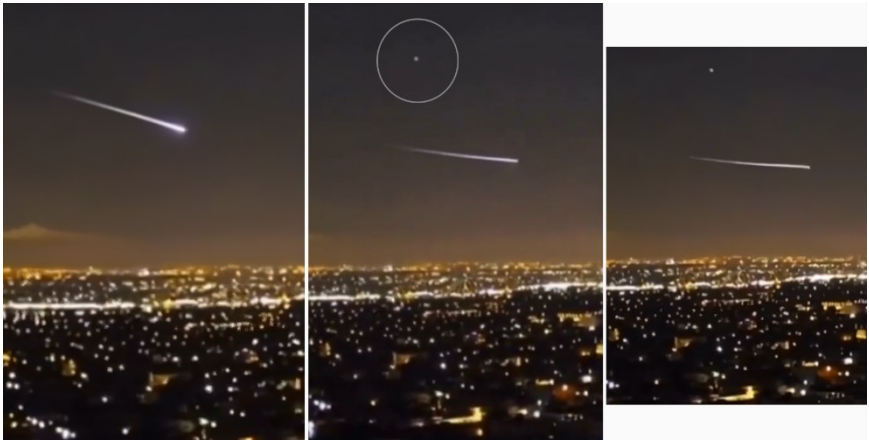
Who knew that a phantom could damage a truck like that? Just kidding, most of the orbs are nothing more than UFO drones; however, some of them appear to be advanced balls of plasma.

A video was shared in Jan. 2025 by a mayor in New Jersey that showed a plasma orb morphing into



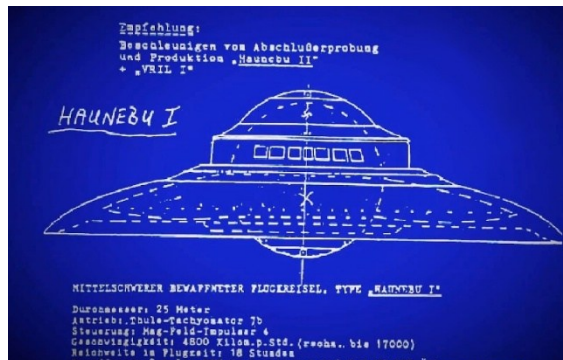
an airplane. But even though it was shaped like a small aircraft, it appeared to be 100% metallic all over; whereas actual planes are all painted white and are not shiny metal. So it was trying to look like a plane but could only take the shape of one; real planes also have painted letters and numbers, which it did not have.

This next object appears to be a large orb because it looks to be small and round from a distance, but it is likely significantly larger than the one above. I expect it to have been sent by good aliens. As you can see in the first image, a small asteroid was recorded streaking through the sky above Mexico City. If it had impacted, it was most likely large enough to have destroyed a dozen houses. However, in the second image, an orb showed up and caused the asteroid to change trajectory. The asteroid actually curved up, which sent it into the ocean:



## UFOs

A UFO allegedly crashed in the Black Forest of Germany, influencing Hitler's attempt to build his own UFOs:



There is even a grainy video that appears to show a Nazi saucer in flight. But even if Hitler could have built one that flew, he was using 1940s technology, so it could not have disappeared, or made 90-degree turns, or engaged in time travel, etc. After the war, at least some German scientists who worked on the UFOs came to the USA, which jump-started the secret development of UFOs here.

I do not believe the absurd claims that Nazis went to Antarctica and established a base where they continued developing advanced UFOs. It is complete nonsense because a base in Antarctica would require frequent flights of supplies and equipment, which could not have continued after the war. How did they get food? Where did their parts and machinery come from that would allow them to build a UFO base?

However, there is evidence that the US gov likely heard such rumors and sent a fleet of ships there in Operation High Jump which were attacked by alien UFOs, and had to retreat. Therefore, the belief that there is an alien base under the ice in Antarctica could be true. (If you want more info on this topic, there are books, videos, and websites on it.)

This next image shows a huge mothership seen in North Carolina; the aliens likely believed the ship was hidden in the dark cloud:



Below appears to be a military helicopter from an unknown country following a UFO:



Another video was taken of a UFO that appeared to be cloaked, making it invisible; however, it apparently did not realize that the lights on the vehicle were not cloaked and could be clearly seen. You can see that this object is likely triangular-shaped:



In the image below (next page), you can see a UFO that shoots a beam of some kind into an inactive volcano; then a small eruption occurs that grows into a large eruption.

This is not just a little concerning; it shows that they can, and will likely cause, destructive eruptions during a period the Bible calls the Great Tribulation.



I hereby officially classify this next UFO as a “Flock UFO.” It is nothing like the jellyfish orbs. The reason I call it a Flock, is because it resembles a flock of birds, but there are several videos that indicate it cannot be birds. Perhaps they believe it is a disguise? The bottom image is what they look like at night:



I have seen several videos of this Flock, or whatever it is, also forming circles; it is not smoke. The latest one was widely shared online; recorded by Frankie Camren above Bonner Springs, Kansas, on May 5, 2025 (*Mysterious black ring appears in Kansas sky*; New York Post, YT, 5\9\2025). It seems dense, then gradually dissipates:



Here are some images of an object that was photographed at high altitude slowly rotating as it slowly moved through the air, as though it were gathering information, like a satellite:



It was likely photographed by a spy satellite.

## Chapter 11

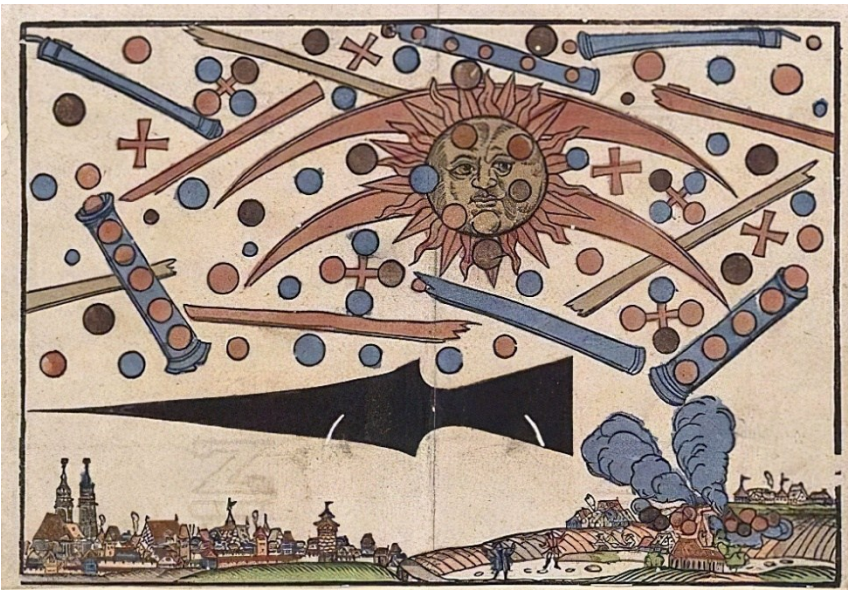
### Alien Wars

*If aliens visit us, the outcome would be much as when Columbus landed in America, which didn't turn out well for the Native Americans. -- Stephen Hawking*

Perhaps the first recorded battle in the sky was witnessed in 104 BC:

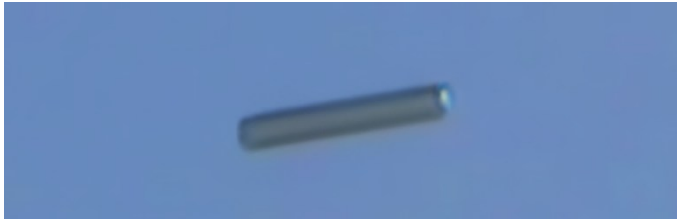
... the people of Ameria and Tudor observed weapons in the sky rushing together from east and west, those from the west being routed. (Richard Stothers, "Unidentified Flying Objects in Classical Antiquity," *The Classical Journal*, 103.1 (2007) page 79)

Another sky battle occurred in Germany, 1561:



Perhaps the most famous sky battle occurred in Nuremberg, Germany, in 1561, when a similar battle took place in the sky, which included objects of several different shapes. *“The globes flew back and forth among themselves and fought vehemently with each other for over an hour. . . [then] fell from the sun down upon the Earth ‘as if they all burned’ and they then wasted away on the Earth with immense smoke.”* (Translation by Ilse Von Jacobi)

Some of the vehicles crashed beyond the city limits, and a large, terrifying, arrow-like object appeared in the sky. Here is a recent screen-shot from a video of a cylindrical UFO that looks similar to those seen in 1561:



Only a few years later, UFOs were again seen battling each other in the sky over Basel, Switzerland, in 1566.



The battle began at dawn and lasted for several hours. From the newspaper woodcut, it appears to show black and light-colored orbs. An eyewitness wrote:

“On the morning of August 7, 1566, many frightened people saw large dark-colored discs appear in the sky and it was as if summer and winter had come at the same time, with fumes and mists, intense heat, shoot and cannon shots. These objects, so numerous as to obscure the Sun, flew at great speed as if they were dancing or fighting. Some, who seemed to fire cannon shots, became fiery red in color.” (Samuel Koch, on the Basel Flyer)

A translation found at *Scientific Research* says the following:

“At the dawn of August 7, we saw large black spheres coming and going with great speed and precision before the sun as they began to fight. Many of them were fiery red and, soon crumbled and then extinguished.” ([www.scrip.org/journal/paperinformation?paperid=136922#f40](http://www.scrip.org/journal/paperinformation?paperid=136922#f40))

Another event over Hamburg, Germany, took place on November 4, 1697. The orbs were described as two “*glowing wheels*.”

You may not believe there really were aliens fighting in the skies, or perhaps you question why they would be fighting. Consider human history; in 1492, when the *New World* was discovered, Spain, France, and England fought with each other over control of territory that was already occupied by primitive natives.

What are those strange objects out there on the horizon? It looks like they are far more advanced than we are. Let's welcome them; what could go wrong?

Rather than sailing across the ocean and finding lands that can be exploited, various aliens have traveled through space to find this beautiful blue planet inhabited by primitives who can be easily exploited. Therefore, it is reasonable to believe that they will battle each other over Earth.



Perhaps one or two races are actually trying to protect us backward humans from being enslaved by the conquistador aliens. Allegedly, the Nordics are one of the races that are watching over and protecting Earth.

Believe it or not, recent evidence suggests that the battle for Earth is still happening. The *Indianapolis News* reported in 1952 a most unusual sight, seen by hundreds:

Three “flying saucers” were spotted by hundreds of Hoosiers, including police and military personnel, over South Central Indiana early today. The objects appeared to have a “dogfight” over Franklin and disappeared as dawn approached. (Franklin ‘Dogfight’ Alerts State Troopers, July 28, 1952)

## INDIANAPOLIS NEWS



In early 2025, a video appeared on my social media feed of a UFO approaching a passenger airliner in China. (I had to increase the resolution of the images in order to publish the screenshots in this book, which results in slight smoothing.)



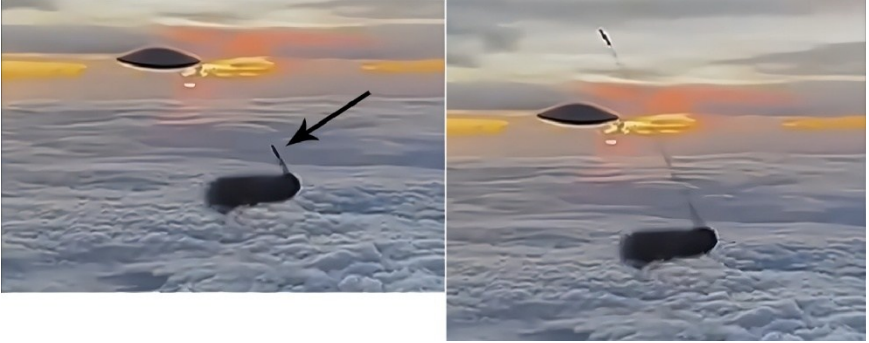


Then, a ripple went through the atmosphere, affecting the clouds above and below the UFO. You can see the clouds first curved down, then curved up:

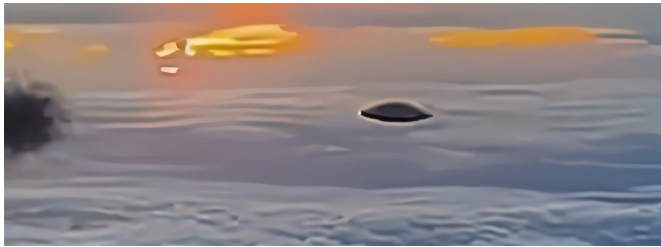


But the ripple was not caused by this UFO; rather, it was another strange-looking UFO that came into view in the next image. The second UFO must have caused some kind of distortion in space and time, which caused the ripple in the atmosphere. Perhaps it was entering our space from another dimension or from a distant location.

Then the strange UFO flew between the airliner and the first UFO and fired a warning shot toward it:



Then, the first UFO decided it was time to leave:



Next up, there was an actual air battle in Nevada. Unfortunately, the vehicles were cloaked, making them invisible, but you can clearly see the weapons being fired and streaking through the sky at each other, even hitting the UFOs, or perhaps the weapons were impacting each other. This originated long before the advent of AI images and video, so only Hollywood could have produced something of this nature back then. It is MUFON case file 90328.



## Chapter 12

### Disinformation and Falsehoods

*The U.S. Government hasn't maintained secrecy regarding UFOs. It's been leaking out all over the place. But the way it's been handled is by denial, by denying the truth of the documents that have leaked. . . . There has been a very large disinformation and misinformation effort around this whole area. And one must wonder, how better to hide something out in the open than just to say, 'It isn't there. You're deceiving yourself if you think this is true.' And yet, there it is right in front of you. – Astronaut Edgar Mitchell (1930-1916)*

### Government Disinformation

Not only are the aliens trying hard to keep information about the abductions and hybrids from the public, but the US government has been working hard to keep all UFO information secret. They have claimed for decades that UFOs do not even exist, even though they knew full well that they do. The government has even spent millions of dollars hiding the evidence and threatening people who speak about seeing UFOs. One well-known debunker (who is likely a gov agent) actually offered \$10,000 cash to a witness to change their story and say that what they witnessed did not happen (this arose out of a famous case). One tool the aliens and the government use is disinformation, which is defined as:

Deliberately false and misleading information announced publicly or leaked by a government or especially by an intelligence agency in order to influence public opinion or the government in another nation.

It is becoming clear to those who have done much research into the UFO issue that the US government has factually known about the existence of aliens on Earth since before the famous crash at Roswell,

New Mexico, in 1947. In 1997, the CIA admitted to spreading disinformation about UFOs and aliens.

Now, what might that disinformation look like? Consider the story of the boy who cried wolf; every day for several days he ran to the townspeople and cried, "There's a wolf! Come help!" So the townspeople ran out to help the boy fend off the wolf, but there was no wolf. The boy did that for several days until the townspeople no longer believed him. Then one day the wolf really did come, and when the boy cried *wolf*, the people ignored him. "You lying dog!" they said. Then the wolf ate the sheep.

Many people were seeing UFOs, and some were getting abducted, so the CIA said to themselves, *How are we going to make the people not believe these reports?* Agent George said, *The best way is to put out a bunch of clearly false reports, so when thinking people hear those reports, they will easily see that they are totally fake. Then when they hear the real reports, they will also dismiss them.*

*That's brilliant, said agent Joe, only dumb people will believe clearly fake reports, which means that most people will not believe in anything that comes out about aliens because they will believe the credible evidence is actually just more fake nonsense. Go write it up. We will make sure it gets published.*

### **Zecharia Sitchin**

Many people do not realize that most CIA agents do not publicly show themselves as agents; they have other jobs such as journalists, diplomats, or businesspeople and are recruited to provide information to the CIA or to spread false information from the CIA to the public. These are the genuine agents of disinformation. Zecharia Sitchin (1920–2010) had a degree in economics and worked as a journalist in Palestine/Israel for about twelve years (based on his age when he moved to the U.S.), then worked for a shipping company after coming to the US in 1952. So he had the needed skills.

There is, of course, no evidence that he was an actual agent for the CIA, but his books fit their agenda perfectly. When recruited, they could have asked Sitchin if he could write some outlandish stories that would cause most people to laugh at the whole idea of aliens. Since he had read a book about ancient Sumerian mythology called *The Seven Tablets of Creation*, he could have decided to write a totally unbelievable story of aliens coming to Earth and finding pre-humans who were already here through evolution, and then genetically altering them to cre-

ate modern humans so they could mine gold that the aliens needed in their atmosphere. This tale was, and still is, utterly laughable to thinking people, but a lie repeated often enough causes many people to believe it. And so millions of people now believe this lie.

Zecharia's first book was published in 1976 and sold beyond his wildest expectations. His books have sold millions and have been translated into 25 languages.

Later, Agent Dan said, *There sure are a lot of gullible people. Those books were supposed to cause people to NOT believe in aliens, but people actually believe his nonsense.*

Yes, said Agent George, *but only dumb people; most people will look into them and don't believe any of it. That is what we want; to keep the thinking people from investigating and finding the truth.*

So the CIA's probable disinformation campaign continued with great success. If Sitchin was not an agent, one thing is factual: his books are very much as described, so fake and full of falsehood that thinking people turn away from the subject in disbelief.

His books are full of unsubstantiated claims, and he never once quoted directly from any Sumerian text but only said those texts said this and that. And when he quotes from the Bible, he either misquotes or distorts its meaning in every way possible, which indicates how he distorts and misuses the Sumerian texts.

Here is a sample of his claims:

It all began, we learn from the various texts, a very long time ago, with the splashing down in the waters of the Persian Gulf or the Arabian Sea of a group of fifty ANUNNAKI—a term literally meaning “Those Who from Heaven to Earth Came.” They waded ashore under the leadership of E.A (“He Whose House Is Water”), a brilliant scientist, and established the first extraterrestrial colony on Earth, calling it E.RI.DU (“House in the Far-away Built”). Other settlements followed in pursuit of the visitors' mission: Obtaining gold by distilling the waters of the Persian Gulf—gold needed urgently back on the home planet of the Anunnaki so that their dwindling atmosphere could be protected by a shield of suspended gold particles. (*Divine Encounters*, page 8-9)

But they were not getting enough gold from the water, so more aliens arrived and started mining:

. . . another group, the IGI.GI (“Those Who Observe and See”) remained skyborne, operating shuttlecraft and spacecraft and space stations (they numbered, Sumerian texts assert, 300 in all). To make sure there were

no failures this time, ANU ("The Heavenly One"), ruler of Nibiru, sent to Earth a half-brother of Enki/Ea, EN.LIL . . . a vast elliptical orbit for Nibiru that lasts 3,600 Earth-years . . . (Ibid., page 9)

It seems that one year on the mythical planet Nibiru equals 3,600 Earth years. After many thousands of years of toiling in the mines, the Anunnaki revolted, so Enki proposed creating a race of workers, but:

He found the "creature"—a hominid, the product of evolution on Earth—in southeast Africa, "above the Abzu." All that we need to do to make it an intelligent worker . . . : (Ibid., page 10)

So all the gods agreed and brought the chief medical officer, Ninmah:

"Create Mankind! Create a Mixed One that he may bear the yoke, let him bear the yoke assigned by Enlil, let the Primitive Worker toil for the gods!" (page 11)

Sitchin claimed that the word "olam" which is translated "everlasting" in the Bible, also means "*long duration*," which is true, but he claims that it refers to the fictional planet Nibiru, which has a long-duration orbit.

The numerous biblical verses in which Olam appears indicate that it was deemed a physical place, not an abstraction. "Thou art from Olam," the Psalmist declared—God is from a place which is a hidden place (and therefore God has been unseen). . . . (Ibid., page 372)

It appears that God lives on the planet Nibiru.

The Prophets . . . spoke of the "Years of Olam" as a measure of a very long time. A clear sense of periodicity, as would result from the periodic appearance and disappearance of a planet, . . . And a possible clincher for identifying Olam with Nibiru was the statement in Genesis 6:4 that the Ne-filim, the young Anunnaki who had come to Earth from Nibiru, were the "people of the Shem" (the people of the rocketships), "those who were from Olam." . . . It is our suggestion that yes, the Bible was keenly aware of Nibiru—and called it Olam, the "disappearing planet." . . . (Ibid., p. 373)

He goes on to say that even though mankind is the result of evolution and genetic engineering by the Anunnaki, that God made the Anunnaki on Olam (Nibiru). Notice what he said in the first quote given above:

ANUNNAKI—a term literally meaning "Those Who from Heaven to Earth Came."

Yet, in a different book, Sitchin defines Anunnaki as, “*the fifty who went from heaven to Earth*” (*The Twelfth Planet*, chapter 11).

We now have dozens of people who have believed Sitchin’s nonsense to such an extent that they have created even more books and videos that continue spreading his lies. The true authorities who discovered and translated the cuneiform texts disagree with Sitchin. We actually have a Sumerian dictionary, so we know that “Anunnaki” means “of royal seed.” In the book, *Babylonian Religion and Mythology*, by L. W. King, London, 1903, the word *Anunnaki* is found three times, but *Nibiru* is not found even once.

*The Wizard of Oz* made people believe he had great power, but it was all just smoke and mirrors; he was actually a little man hiding behind a curtain pulling strings and hitting gongs. Zecharia Sitchin was that man in real life. Sitchin has become a legend among those who are easily deceived. He has also given them a reason to believe fanciful tales instead of the truth of the Bible.

Carl Marx and Charles Darwin believed the illusions they spread, but I believe Sitchin knew full well that he was lying and laughed all the way to the bank. He wrote a whole series of his fantasy stories, published as truth. He said the Anunnaki were the *elohim* in the Bible, and also the “Nefilim.” Notice that he even spells Nephilim differently than anyone else. *Oh, my, he must have been more intelligent than any Hebrew expert in history!* LOL

We have previously learned the best possible meaning for the word, Nephilim; yet, Sitchin said it means, “*the people of the fiery rockets*” (*The Twelfth Planet*, chapter 5). Michael Heiser wrote an open letter to Sitchin in which he said, “*The words Mr. Sitchin tells us refer to rocket ships have no such meanings according to the ancient Mesopotamians themselves.*” You will hear Sitchin’s nonsense repeated over and over again by those who have jumped on his rocket-ship. Never mind that **UFOs do not use rocket power propulsion; there are NO flames coming out of the back of UFOs.**

I only bought one of his worthless books, *used*, but was unable to read all of it. Why would I want to waste those hours reading such drivel? He wants the reader to believe that he based his outlandish lies on *The Seven Tablets of Creation*, by L. W. King, 1902 (Divine Encounters, p. 7), also known as the *Enuma Elish*, or the *Epic of Creation*. But he

never once tells you from what section or page of the book he takes anything, because nothing he says is actually in that book.

Thanks to Google Books, you can read a PDF of that 1902 book, but the full text of the *Enuma Elish* is also available at websites such as [www.worldhistory.org](http://www.worldhistory.org), where you can easily search for words like “Nibiru” which is NOT found anywhere in the book. The word “Anunnaki” is found only 5 times. I will not go into the details of all of his outlandish claims; all you have to do is read the *Enuma Elish* for yourself, and you will see that the only resemblance is the names used. The *Ancient Origins* website says:

In both, translator E. A. Speiser clearly states Nibiru is Jupiter and L. W. King states the same in his translation. Nibiru derives from eberu, “to cross,” from which Sitchin dubbed his Nibiru as the “planet of crossing.” But the cross is that of the zodiac, upon which is the celestial Sun. The alleged orbit of Sitchin’s planet is 3,600 years. The number is a sar, the Sumerian unit of time equal to 3,600 Earth years, generated by multiplying 6 by 10 (pur), arriving at 60 (soss);  $60 \times 10$  gave 600 (ner), and  $600 \times 6 = 3,600$  (sar).

Nowhere in the creation epic does it associate this figure with Nibiru and nowhere else in Sumerian mythic literature is Nebiru mentioned. Thus, Anunnaki is simply a Sumerian term for the gods, who did not come from another planet. (30 Jan., 2019. *The Nephilim, Anunnaki and More: Four Common Mistakes Made When Interpreting Mythology*, By Priscilla Vogelbacher. [www.ancient-origins.net/myths-legends-europe/mistaken-mythology-0011408](http://www.ancient-origins.net/myths-legends-europe/mistaken-mythology-0011408))

Now, let us try for a minute to use our brains. Critics have pointed out the nonsense of a planet that travels completely out of the solar system and back in an orbit of 3,600 years. It would spend most of that time so far away from the sun that it would be frozen solid. Yet, the criticism has not deterred Sitchin’s followers.

He also claimed that the Anunnaki came to Earth 432,000 years before the Flood to mine for gold:

For forty Sars the Anunnaki who were sent to the Abzu toiled mining the gold; but then they mutinied. (Sitchin, *Divine Encounters*, page 10)

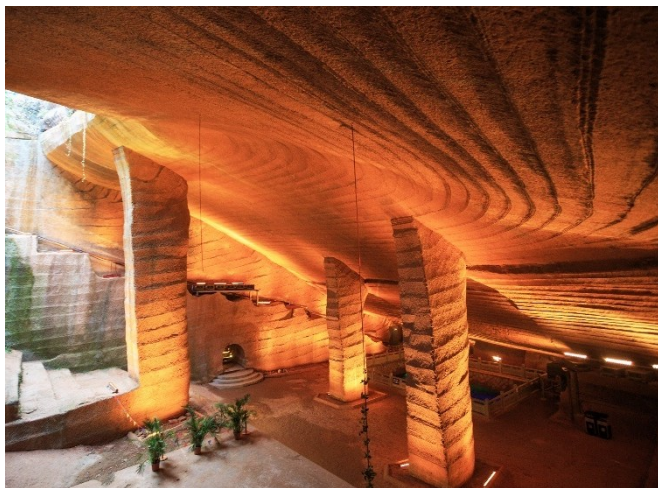
He said 120 Sars equaled 432,000 years; 432,000 divided by 120 equals 3600, times 40 equals 144,000 years. This means they worked the mines for 144,000 years before they mutinied. Just how much freaking gold did they need? LOL, they could have emptied most of the planet of gold in 144,000 years of mining. But 144,000 years of gold

mining was still not enough; they supposedly created modern humans so they could keep working the mines! What a load of bull-crap. And his followers eat it up. They don't even know what critical thinking is.

Why did it take 144,000 years for them to finally get tired of toiling and revolt? But notice that the aliens “toiled” in the mines. Sitchin never once suggested they did anything other than use a pick-and-shovel, which is laughable. Aliens can travel through space and time in UFOs; they could have used lasers to bore holes in the rock to access the gold. They would have used advanced technology to extract the gold ore without doing it manually. However, aliens are so advanced; if they want gold, they might have the technology to take some sand and move the electrons, protons, and neutrons around to create gold.

The world's oldest gold mines in Africa, often referred to as Anunnaki mines, are believed to be at least 43,000 years old; possibly as old as 200,000 years. These mines show no evidence of having been worked with any machinery, unlike the group of 24 ancient Longyou Caves in China, and several other caves, which present clear evidence of having been cut out by a machine. (Not mines, caves.)

It should be evident to anyone with a brain that these caves were excavated with a machine. We have machines today that carve in much the same way.



There is absolutely no way to know when they were created, but there is evidence that they are very ancient, because the huge amount of sandstone removed cannot be found anywhere in the vicinity. They had become completely filled with water and debris prior to their discovery in 1992. Finally, no race of beings on Earth had such machinery in the last 12,000 years; therefore, they could have been cut 300 million years ago.



According to an article by the *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences*, astrophysicists have determined that gold is produced in space in huge quantities during events such as the merging of two neutron stars and supernova explosions ([www.pnas.org/doi/10.1073/pnas.2026110118](http://www.pnas.org/doi/10.1073/pnas.2026110118)). There is also an asteroid named 16 Psyche, which NASA said has \$100,000 quadrillion worth of gold. Since aliens are far more advanced than humans, this means they knew where to find large amounts of gold millions of years ago.

But wait, there's more. The Large Hadron Collider succeeded in turning lead into gold. Sure, it was only a few molecules, but if we can do a few molecules, they likely can create large volumes of it.

Other than disinformation, another reason that Sitchin could have developed his theories of aliens creating humans was an attempt to subvert Christianity. For Christians, Satan is the ancient enemy of God and humanity, but Sitchin is a Jew, and most Jews do not believe in Satan; many are actually atheists. They consider Christians to be their ancient enemy and blame them for all the pain and suffering they have endured over the past 2,000 years; therefore, the subversion of Christianity is a plausible reason for Sitchin's lies, and he has succeeded in deceiving many Christians who now believe that aliens created us.

### **Ancient Aliens TV Show**

Taking their inspiration from Sitchin, the *Ancient Aliens* TV show on the History Channel often invents stories, knowingly telling lies. I suspect that the show was started as a vehicle for government disinformation, but it has become so popular that it has continued for 21 seasons and actually does often present useful and accurate material. Yet they cannot stop twisting facts and telling lies. I recently saw a clip on

YouTube in which the famed Erich von Däniken told a story he claimed was about time travel in the Bible. Here is the story:

In the Hebrew Bible, descriptions of the prophet Jeremiah in Jerusalem, are eerily similar to both of these accounts of time travel. "Even in the Bible, the prophet Jeremiah was sitting together with a few of his friends and there was a young boy, his name was Abimelech. And Jeremiah said to Abimelech, 'Go out of Jerusalem, there is a hill and collect some figs for us.' The boy went out and collected the fresh figs. All of a sudden, Abimelech hears some noise and wind in the air, and he becomes unconscious; he had a blackout. After a time he wakes up again and he saw that it was nearly the evening. So he runs back to the city and the city was full of strange soldiers. And he said, 'What's going on here? Where is Jeremiah and all the others?' And an old man said, 'That was sixty two years ago.' (Season 4) (Also YT: *Humans From the Future | Ancient Aliens*, May 8, 2025)

The inference is that a UFO abducted the boy and returned him many years later. First, it is NOT in the Bible or the Apocrypha; however, after much searching, I found a similar story in 4 Baruch. Nevertheless, the actual text merely stated he sat down "*to rest a bit*" in the shade of a tree and fell asleep; it said nothing about hearing a noise or wind or becoming unconscious-- only that when he woke up, it was many years later. Therefore, it did include time travel, so it could have been caused by aliens; nevertheless, their claims about the passage are exaggerated and mostly false and not in the Bible. This is one way in which they twist the truth to make it seem as though biblical or historical events support their views. This story is not as outlandish as Sitchin's, but nearly.

During my research I have come across several accounts of time travel and other strange incidents with no known cause or reason. This suggests to me that aliens like to intentionally mess with people, like mischievous teenagers.

Many Christians viewing the show would recognize that the story is not there, which could lead them to dismiss the entire idea that aliens are visiting Earth. This was the goal, until recently when the government was forced to disclose information about aliens, but we are likely still not being given the whole truth.

Christians cannot pray against aliens and their agenda if we are unaware of it. This is why Satan spreads so much disinformation about them. Many Christians still do not believe that aliens are even real.

**ALERT****ALERT****ALERT**

I literally had every word above written when I had my final jaw-dropping moment. I was watching Linda Moulton Howe's weekly YouTube Earthfiles podcast dated Feb. 25, 2026, and she spoke about the time she interviewed Zechariah Sitchin at his millionaire's office with a "breathtaking" view overlooking Manhattan.

Zechariah Sitchin and I met at his office in Rockefeller Center, in New York City, in approximately, the year 1983. . . .

He had some papers and a book and various things on this desk. And I finally decided, I might not ever be there or be able to talk with him again. And I decided to ask him the question that had burned in my mind ever since the first handshake that I had with Zechariah Sitchin at a conference before this meeting in Rockefeller.

And I said, "Sir, I would really like to ask you in respect; I'm asking this question with respect." And I remember saying that, and stressing it. And he looked at me with his crystal blue, light eyes through those glasses, and he said, 'Please.'

I said, "Sir, have you ever, in the past or currently now, do you work an intelligence agency of the United States, such as the Central Intelligence Agency, or Defense Intelligence Agency?"

And there was a silence like the air came out of the room. And I'll never forget, I didn't take my eyes away from his; he didn't take his eyes away from mine, and we just sat there looking eye-to-eye, with that question hanging in the air. And I remember telling a dear friend about the moment and saying, "I think that the stare at each other went on for at least two minutes."

And when he spoke, his voice was softer, and he said, "What a peculiar question, Linda. If I did work for those agencies, I wouldn't be able to tell you, and therefore your question would have no meaning, because I would never be able to answer you. And if I do work, or did work, for the intelligence agencies, I would never tell you or anyone else. So you have asked me a question today, that I cannot answer."

He sat there a long time thinking up an answer he believed would get him off the hook, but if he did not work for any intel agency, all he needed to say was, "*No, I do not, nor have I ever, worked for an intel agency.*" His answer was that he could not say that he worked for them. That is a confession that he did in fact work for them. And yet, many people will still believe his lies.

This proves that "*it is easier to fool people, than to convince them that they have been fooled*" (attributed to Mark Twain, though not proven).

### A Fake Mars Mission-Video

A video appeared on YouTube on Nov. 8, 2024, which alleged to show a NASA mission to Mars in 1973. The craft was allegedly called ISV Columbus. However, a large YouTube channel with a large team of researchers and graphics editors examined the images inside the video and discovered it had been faked.



*The Why Files* channel was able to determine that the spacecraft in the above image was taken from a movie. But it took a great deal of time and effort to create the short video, which has had no impact and little notice. So why create it? The evidence that the video is fake, and thus the Mars mission is fake, has millions of views on YT.

Therefore, this video smells very much like disinformation. Because of this FAKE video of a Mars mission, most people will dismiss ALL claims of a secret mission to Mars. This makes me believe that there really was a secret mission to Mars.

### The Fake Alien Psyop

The term “psyop” refers to a psychological operation designed to influence the minds and emotions of the public or a particular group of people through information warfare, including the mass media. The US government has openly conducted psyops in a formal military capability since World War I, but also through other branches and agencies like the CIA.

Two such psyops are:

**COINTELPRO** (1956–1971): FBI program to surveil, infiltrate, discredit, and disrupt domestic groups (e.g., civil rights, anti-war, and Black nationalist organizations). Exposed in the 1970s; officially illegal domestic operations.

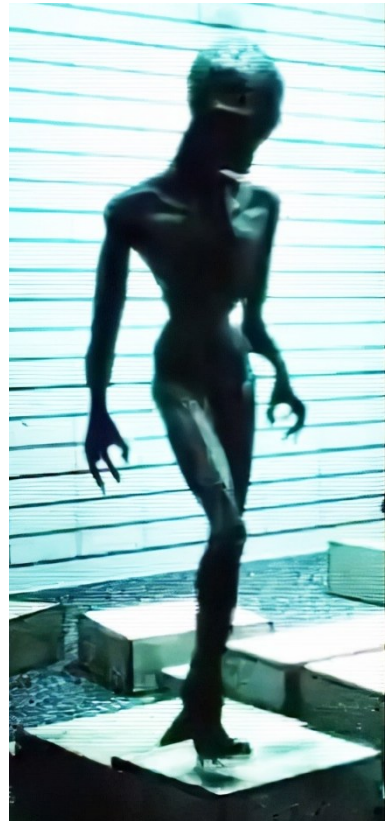
**Operation Mockingbird** (alleged 1950s–1970s): Claimed CIA program to influence US media through journalist relationships and propaganda placement. Partially confirmed via Church Committee findings (the CIA had relationships with 50 journalists and organizations), though the full “Mockingbird” scale remains debated. Many people believe this operation is still happening today as the CIA attempts to control the narrative of important news stories through the mainstream media. (There are books and videos about all of these psyops.)

There have been, no doubt, many other psyops, such as one I believe is ongoing and began in the 2010s. Certain people in the government decided to produce a video to fool the public. The likely main reason appears to be an attempt to disparage Christians and their belief in God while promoting atheism and the theory of evolution, using a fake captured alien.

The first installment of the video showed an alien walking across boxes, as though they were filming how the creature walked. At first, I found it believable, but after doing more research, I found evidence that it is fake. The proof is that it is labeled “*Project Blue Book: No. 220675, 6 June, 1964.*”

However, according to an AI search, Official Project Blue Book records (declassified in stages, with bulk transfer to the National Archives post-1969 termination, and full public access via FOIA by the 1970s–1990s) contain no such case number 220675 involving alien footage or interviews. Also, Project Blue Book never listed captured aliens or downed UFOs, but only investigated sightings of UFOs reported by the general public.

Although the lighting is bad in the video of the captured alien walking, if you notice the shape of the head and upper body, this fellow must be the same individual as in the alien interview video that appeared in sev-



eral parts a few years later. It even has the same Project Blue Book number, but the interview was held a few days later on June 9, supposedly.

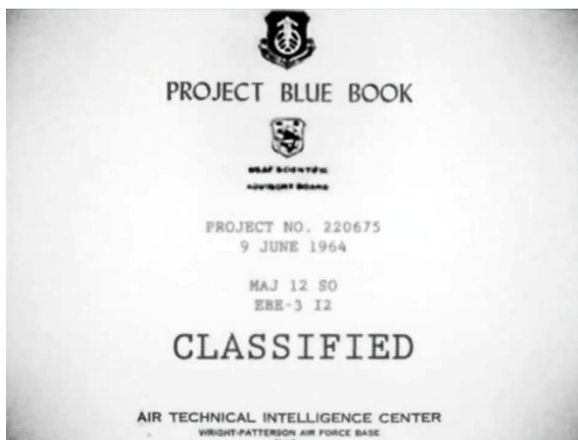
You might suspect that he is one of three well-known J-Rod beings from another star system, but they only communicated telepathically and did not escape like this fake alien supposedly did.

The first interview installment was released after Donald Trump became president and the fake alien claimed to be a future human who traveled back in time one million years. He supposedly spoke English through his mouth, which he learned upon his arrival. But since his mouth and lips did not move the way a human mouth does, you cannot tell what is being said from looking at the video; you must depend on the poor audio, which I believe is totally fake. The alien is merely a high-quality rubber puppet.

When he refused to answer questions, they restrained his arms and tortured him with bright camera flashes, supposedly. Take careful notice of the dots on his forehead.

The alien-image on the next page in color has been widely used online and was allegedly made

electronically before the advent of AI. In other words, it is just a fake image, but it matches the creature in the alien video perfectly. How is it that a computer artist making an alien with Photoshop just happened to make a twin of the one in the videos? I believe this color image is



NOT a photoshopped image, but an actual photo of the rubber puppet, with moving eyelids and mouth worthy of Hollywood.



The fake alien claimed that he was, in fact, a future human as they will be after another one million years of evolution and described the emergence of life exactly as the theory of evolution, minus the Big Bang.

He also said there is no God and that a US president will destroy the world with a preemptive nuclear strike in 50 years. The video was supposedly made in 1964. The Democrats were fond of claiming that Trump would start WWII, but he was not president when the US caused the overthrow of Ukraine (Obama was), and he was not president when Russia invaded Ukraine in 2022; Biden was. I suspect they were trying to push atheism and disparage Christianity, while also attacking Donald Trump with the release of that part of the video.

Then, a few years later, lo and behold, another part of the supposed same interview came out that warned of the dangers of AI after the emergence of AI— what a coincidence. Now, if said video had come out 25 years ago, it might lead to its being credible, but when such a video comes out just in time for the various events, then it points to it being fake.

The interviewer believes in God but is a real scumbag. Here is an example:

Interviewer:

So this artificial super intelligence; is it a computer?

EBE #3:

You do not have the capacity to . . .

Interviewer:

I swear if you say I don't have the capacity to comprehend one more time, I'll drill a 9mm through that mutant skull of yours. Again, is it a computer?

The final proof that convinced me beyond doubt that it is fake is what happens at the end of the interview. During the interview, an assistant tells the interviewer that the alien only has about ten minutes left. Was it ten minutes to live? Or ten minutes until it passed out from lack of sleep? Then, at the end, the interviewer said, "*Time to meet God*," and supposedly planned to murder the alien, but you can hear a scuffle that does not appear on-camera.

We are expected to believe that the assistant attacked the interviewer, his superior officer, and then wheeled the alien down the hall on a medical bed and through doors into a large hangar. Then the alien is shown walking up into his saucer-shaped craft. The door shuts, and it flies off through an open hangar door.



At no time would the US government outright murder a captured alien or allow a captured alien to escape, especially one who had been tortured. Such things have never been mentioned by any whistleblower as having occurred. It is complete nonsense and not believable.

## Chapter 13

### Interplanetary Space Vehicles

*I believe that these extra-terrestrial vehicles and their crews are visiting this planet from other planets, which obviously are a little more technically advanced than we are here on Earth.* – Astronaut Gordon Cooper

Although I do believe NASA went to the moon, I find it hard to believe they went there in that contraption that looked like it belonged to the Beverly Hillbillies. Especially when you consider that the military already had working UFOs that are *alleged* to be called Interplanetary Space Vehicles (ISVs). I do not know what those involved officially do call them, so I will call them ISVs.

Did the military not inform NASA about having ISVs? Whistleblowers have been telling us for decades what they are doing at Area 51, which includes reverse engineering crashed UFOs, sometimes with the help of captured aliens. That is another subject that takes up many books and videos, so I will only provide a few pieces of evidence that show we already had ISVs in the mid-60s.

UFO historian Michael Schratt, in his book, *Dark Files, Book 1: A Pictorial History of Lost, Forgotten and Obscure UFO Encounters*, reports the account of Eddie Laxson, an electronics instructor at Sheppard Air Force Base next to Wichita Falls, TX. He was on his way to work very early one morning in 1966 when he came across a UFO sitting right in the middle of the highway.

What he saw looked very much like the main body of a military plane, but without wings. A hatch was open on the side, which opened downward to the pavement and provided stairs for someone to go into the object. The key point is that the person he saw standing next to it looked fully human and was wearing military clothing. And on the side

of the craft were English letters, "TL4738" or "TL4138." The case became part of Project Blue Book and appeared in several newspaper articles:

# LAWTON MORNING PRESS

VOLUME 21, NUMBER 29    THIRD AND A AVE., LAWTON, OKLAHOMA, THURSDAY, MARCH 24, 1966    26 PAGES    SINGLE COPY PRICE 5c

---

**Passenger In Uniform Standing By**

## Temple Man 'Meets' UFO On Highway

TEMPLE (Special)—A fish-shaped object, camouflaged with a uniform pilot, darted to earth near here early Wednesday and landed U. S. 70 highway, an electronics instructor at Sheppard Air Force Base reported.

The instructor, Edna Laxson, who commutes from his home in Temple to Sheppard, said he saw the object when he drove south on Highway 70, about 10 miles south and east of Temple at 1:30 a.m. Wednesday.

Laxson said the object, which he estimated to be 15 to 20 feet long and 10 to 15 feet wide, was parked at a 45-degree angle on the highway.

Standing beside the object was a man dressed in a suit similar to civilian worn by members of the Air Force, Laxson said. The man wore a cap with the bill turned up, as if to shield his eyes.

about three feet off the ground, he reported.

Laxson, about 40, said he stopped the car, got out and walked to the object. He had a camera in his auto. As he went back to get the camera, the object took off, he said.

The aluminum colored object, which was straight up and down, was about 10 feet long and 10 feet wide. Laxson said the object had a small, round, black, circular opening in the center of its front end.

Laxson said the object had no apparent motion while taking off.

LAXSON SAID he later talked to a truck driver who confirmed seeing the object while it was in the air.

Laxson reported the vehicle was the aircraft TL 4138, or

after returning to copy them on paper.

The man Laxson saw standing beside the vehicle had a camera in his auto. The instructor reported. He had seen the aircraft appear to take off or land on the highway. The aircraft had three chevrons up and three down.

LAXSON'S WIFE, Pearl, is a first grade teacher in Temple.

The instructor said the vehicle had four lights on its side. Two upper lights were aimed at the front and rear of the vehicle and the other two were focused on the ground, he said.

Laxson said the two men at the ground made a pattern which he described as a half-circle. The lights were the bright-

ness in the air it seemed to have a magnetic effect on the hair on his arm, he reported.

Laxson said that after the object did not get back, it was followed him at about the half mile west of the highway when he noticed a truck driver at the edge of the road.

Laxson said he started making the driver could be experiencing trouble.

THE DRIVER said Laxson was not having mechanical trouble but had stopped because an object had been hovering high and he wanted to see what it was.

Laxson said the truck driver, C. W. Anderson, Jr., joined in the object. Anderson was a 1954 Chevrolet and was a member of the Sheppard Air Force Base.

Anderson confirmed Wednesday that he had talked to Laxson and that he had signed the object.

of to look at the little down. This, apparently, was when the vehicle landed, he said.

ANDERSON said the object followed him at about the half mile west of the highway when he noticed a truck driver at the edge of the road.

Laxson said he started making the driver could be experiencing trouble.

THE DRIVER said Laxson was not having mechanical trouble but had stopped because an object had been hovering high and he wanted to see what it was.

Laxson said the truck driver, C. W. Anderson, Jr., joined in the object. Anderson was a 1954 Chevrolet and was a member of the Sheppard Air Force Base.

Anderson confirmed Wednesday that he had talked to Laxson and that he had signed the object.

(March 24, 1966)

In another newspaper, Laxson said:

"What I saw was definitely not from space. The man was wearing fatigues and had a cap with the bill broken up [turned up] like Air Force mechanics wear," Laxson said. "It had common English letters on it." (*The Daily Oklahoman*, March 1, 1971, page 13)

When Laxson drove up, the man quickly entered the vehicle, which then lifted off the ground and shot off "*at tremendous speed.*" It traveled "*about a mile in five seconds.*" This equals 720 miles per hour. The only noise was a drill-like sound.

This incident presents strong evidence that the US military was already flying around in wingless craft in 1966, three years before the supposed moon landing. If they were unable to actually make it to the moon in an ISV in 1969, they certainly could by the mid-1970s. The evidence suggests that by the time the 21<sup>st</sup> century arrived, whatever those UFOs can do, the ISVs can do.

Whistleblower Bill Holden reported that in the 1960s, he was a loadmaster and flight steward for special air missions with a Top Secret clearance, which allowed him to be on flights with President Kennedy in 1963. He was on several flights with military officers and scientists who were flown to various bases to view UFOs and alien bodies, which he also was allowed to see. Bill Holden:

On one occasion in 1966, he flew to an unknown place he believed was Hawaii, then went to a "viewing deck" that looked out over the water. They watched as a USO (Unidentified Submersible Object) flew out of

the water, hovered in one place for a few seconds, then disappeared, then shortly reappeared, did some maneuvers, and then dove back into the water. (*Whistleblower Bill Holden talks about his UFO and alien encounters during his military service*, Sep 18, 2023, Eyes On Cinema, YouTube)

Though Bill is the grandson of a Methodist preacher, this information did not disturb his religious beliefs. He believes that humans are not the only intelligent life in the universe and that Earth is millions of years old. He did not speak out until several years after his nondisclosure agreement expired in the 1980s.

He was not told whether the USO had alien or human pilots, but this did not happen by chance. The object flew up intentionally as a demonstration of sorts, as if to show off what we have and what we can do, which is strong evidence that the object belonged to the USA, not aliens.

The image below appears to have been taken in the 1960s or early 70s. An AI detector said there is only a 1% chance that it is AI-generated. Another one said 0% chance it is AI.



To answer the obvious question, if the US military had such craft, why make the moon landing in a tin can? During the 1960s and even today, only limited individuals in the military are allowed to know what goes on in the Dark Operations, or Dark Ops. Those ops are top secret; therefore, it is highly probable that NASA did not even know what was happening at Area 51.

But just as important, even if NASA had known about the ISVs, this information had to be kept secret. Since knowledge of ISV craft could not be revealed to the world, they had to use a craft that was more in keeping with the known technology of the 1960s.

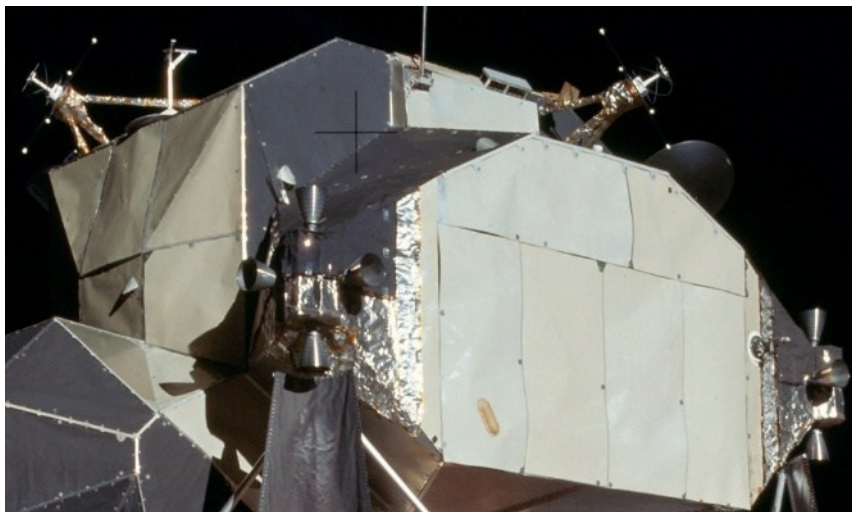
Some of the moon landing footage looks fake because it was filmed in advance. On a talk show with Conan O'Brien that aired May 17, 2000, Conan said:

"We watched you guys land on the moon."

Buzz Aldrin then said:

"No you didn't. No you didn't. Because there wasn't any [live] television. You watched animation. See you associated what you saw with . . ."

He did not finish his sentence, which has caused me to doubt that the FIRST moon landing was genuine. After much analysis, I believe they did go to the moon but filmed part of it because it would have been nearly impossible to broadcast the live video feed. If they really did go to the moon in this flimsy Beverly Hillbillies contraption, then those three astronauts were very brave men. Look at the dents and edges of the sheet metal that are not sealed.

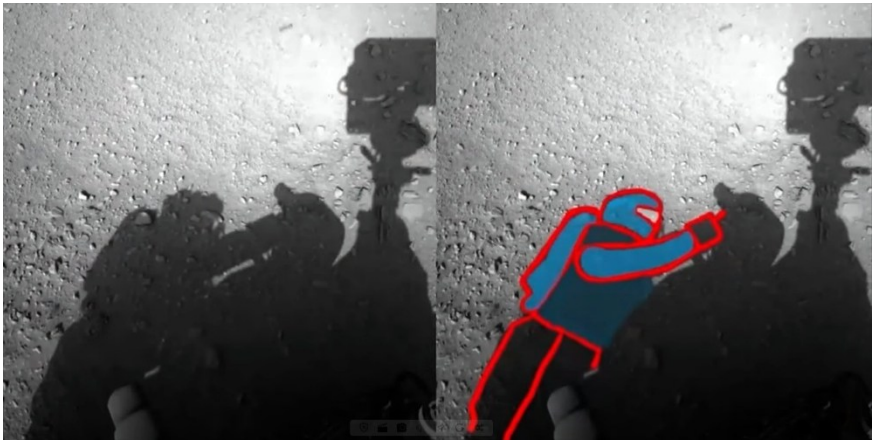


A 2006 article in *Wired*, told the story of Gary McKinnon, a 40-year-old UK man who hacked into NASA and found images of off-world craft. More importantly, he found a log of crewmen labeled "Non-Terrestrial Officers."

It contained names and ranks of U.S. Air Force personnel who are not registered anywhere else. It also contained information about ship-to-ship transfers, but I've never seen the names of these ships noted anywhere else. ([www.wired.com/2006/06/ufo-hacker-tells-what-he-found](http://www.wired.com/2006/06/ufo-hacker-tells-what-he-found))

McKinnon's hack was discovered, and he was arrested, but the UK government blocked his extradition to the US.

The Mars Curiosity rover operated many years past its expected life span, and some people suspect it's because an actual person on Mars worked on it. This image has never been debunked. It shows what appears to be an astronaut cleaning the solar panel of the rover. Though he was not wearing a helmet, he must have had a breathing regulator in his mouth. You can even see the shadow of his hair:



But we don't need to speculate any longer about the USA having advanced technology. David Grusch is a former U.S. Air Force officer and intelligence official who served as a representative of the National Reconnaissance Office to the Unidentified Aerial Phenomena Task Force from 2019 to 2021. He testified before Congress about aliens on July 26, 2023, and stated that "*nonhuman biologics*" were recovered during UFO crashes.

And on April 14, 2025, Michael Kratsios, Director of the White House Office of Science and Technology Policy (OSTP) and Science Advisor to the President, gave a public statement at the Endless Frontiers Retreat in Austin, Texas, in which he stated:

Our technologies permit us to manipulate time and space. They leave distance annihilated, cause things to grow, and improve productivity.

This is equal to saying, *We can time travel, travel through space utilizing wormholes, etc., just like aliens.*

In November 2025, a new documentary came out that interviewed dozens of people who had “direct knowledge” of UFOs while working for the US Government. Here are a few interesting quotes:

“I have come to the conclusion that we are not only not alone in the universe, but we have been discovered by an intelligence from some other part of the universe. (Christopher Mellon, former Deputy Assistant Secretary of Defense for Intelligence, DOD.) . . .

“We were shocked to find that we were getting pushback from people in the Pentagon, based on their religious beliefs.” John F. Stratton, Jr. Former member of Navy Intelligence, and First Director of the UAP Task Force.) . . .

“There really were religious fundamentalist extremists within the Pentagon that had a severe adversity to this topic. . . . A senior DOD official actually stopped me in the hallway in the Pentagon and told me that we were doing the devil's work.” Luis Elizondo. . . .

“I had to deal with people who were senior to me who were telling me, in their world, that these are demons. And we are poking demons, and messing in Satan's world, and all these other things. That to me was, ‘I can't believe this is coming out of your mouth.’ . . .

I'm briefing [on] an advanced aerospace vehicle that has been detected on multiple sensors, that's absolutely there, and you're telling me that you think these are demons and we shouldn't even look at them and study them? My mind was blown.” (John F. Stratton Jr.) . . .

(*Age of Disclosure*, November, 2025.)

## Chapter 14

### ET Communication and Crop Circles

*Two possibilities exist: Either we are alone in the Universe or we are not. Both are equally terrifying. -- Arthur C. Clarke*

One way that Extra-Terrestrials have been communicating with humans is through crop circles. Crop circles appear in over two dozen countries, and most of them have been proven to be genuine. The complete details can be easily found online and in books, so I will merely summarize what has become accepted fact by most people who are informed on this subject.

First documented in 1980, these crop formations have been appearing for hundreds of years. Although the famous case of the *Mowing Devil* of 1678 was proven false by Francesco Grassi, in *Crop Circles: Signs of Intelligence*, there exist even earlier reports. According to *Crop Circles: The Exhibition*, by The Crop Circle Exhibition Project, the accounts were originally handed down orally through legends, folktales, and fairy tales. The first written record of a crop circle goes back to 1590, in France. Some people were accused of trampling a circle during a dance with the devil. The circles were usually attributed to “*witches, pagan spirits, or the devil.*”

The first crop circles were nothing more than simple circles, but after humans began to study them in the 1980s, more intricate designs began showing up, and some became extremely detailed, to the point of being designs for machines.

There is significant evidence that various governments have been involved in spreading disinformation about crop circles, claiming that they are man-made, but I won't cover that issue here; you can find plenty of videos and websites that will provide those details. The evidence indicates that the vast majority of them are real.

One fellow went flying over the fields in an ultralight (a motor-powered craft that resembles a hang glider). On his return trip, he saw a crop circle in a field that clearly had not been there just minutes before, with no people around it. And the final bit of proof is that witnesses have seen a small silver metallic orb flying over a field as a crop circle is formed in seconds. This has also been documented on video. Those orbs are UFO drones.

When you stomp down a stalk of something like corn or wheat with a board, it breaks, and the end result is not a great-looking crop circle. But in a genuine circle, the stalks burst from the inside, like heating something in the microwave. They are also bent into various patterns and shapes that resemble cross-hatch weaving, which is absolutely impossible to accomplish by stomping with a board. It has also been found that the seeds from inside a crop circle produce a higher yield than other seeds from the same field. And the pattern of many genuine crop circles can still be seen, even after the next year's crop grows up. Yet many Christians dismiss crop circles, simply calling them fake. Sad.

I heard a lady on YouTube say that crop circles were made by forces coming up from the Earth; that Earth-Mother was warning us before it's too late (LOL). No, they are not made by Earth-Mother, but UFO drones.



Linda Moulton Howe reported that the ETs are telling people that the US government is, or is going to conduct, some kind of experiment out in space that could potentially threaten to tear apart the fabric of space, which would be disastrous for the entire universe. Another lady,

Linda Porter, provided this information in a letter. Howe reported what Porter said:

Linda Porter said there are literally hundreds of different alien life forms here trying to stop what is happening. As it is putting their own worlds at risk. Some, as I have mentioned in earlier letters, are not supposed to be interfering but are doing so anyway. What they are all trying to do is stop a ripple effect that will emanate outward from Earth, should this government experiment succeed.

“With all their technology, why don’t the aliens or their superiors, just walk in and stop the whole thing themselves? Why do they need us abductees to speak for them? Something just doesn’t make any sense. I wonder if we are being lied to, used for some purpose to put over ideas that they want us to believe. . . .” (*Revelations From Alien Encounters*, 2/21/2017, YT, Gaia channel)

This indicates that both Lindas had become suspicious, and Howe normally believes whatever a whistleblower or contactee says. So it’s likely that, just like the government, some aliens spread false information that they want us to believe. Perhaps they plan to use this as an excuse to take over the world’s governments.



(photo purchased from Steve Alexander Photography, UK)

This crop circle (August 15, 2002) is located right next to a BBC broadcast antenna in England. This likely means the crop circle is trying to let us know that they are sending us a message.

It clearly shows the head of a gray alien, and the large circular area contains a message in binary code. This code was translated to read:

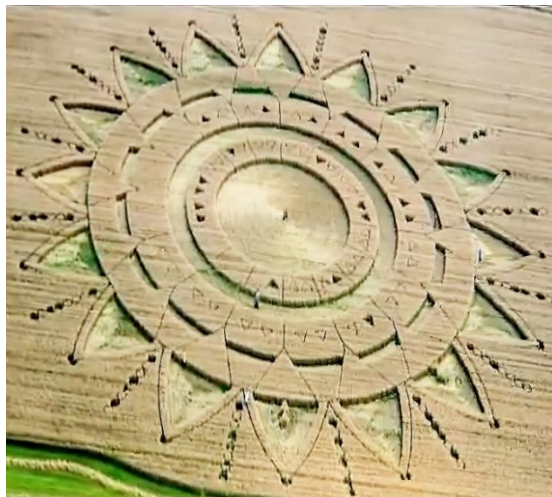
Beware the bearers of false gifts and their broken promises. Much pain, but still time. Believe. There is good out there. We oppose deception. Conduit closing. ([www.cropcircleconnector.com/anasazi/time2007n.html](http://www.cropcircleconnector.com/anasazi/time2007n.html))

But who are the ones sending the message? Is the message about the grays, or are they the ones sending the message? I suspect that Skinny Bob sent the message:



So it looks like these are likely good aliens, at least good in the sense that they mean humanity no harm.

Another crop circle message was produced on June 23, 2015, in Turin, Italy. A binary code is contained in the round dots extending outward and encircling the formation. Geneticist Horace Drew, Ph.D., of Sydney, Australia, translated the code to read: “*Beware of extra-terrestrials bearing gifts!*” (*Revelations From Alien Encounters*, YT).



These two messages both warn that some aliens will offer humanity “gifts” of knowledge and/or technology, but we should beware of them, as these will not work to our benefit. Or, because they have hidden motives. They could claim to be here for the benefit of humanity, but their actual plans are nefarious.

Dr. Drew said the inner ring also contains a code, but its meaning is unclear. “*Dr. Drew thinks some of it warns about a Trojan Horse event coming to Earth,*” said Linda. This indicates that we need to be cautious of any gifts from aliens, which could be disastrous for humans!

On several occasions in 2015 and 2016, a fellow who wishes to remain anonymous gave Linda a binary code he received by telepathic downloads (aliens communicate telepathically). Dr. Drew also translated this code:

Imminent threat soon upon Earth's leaders and civilizations  
Expose and disband hidden knowledge to all citizens  
Employ safe and controlled joint study to all minds  
Progression imperative for combined survival . . .  
Royal Emerther warning  
Expose foreign technology to all  
Evolutionary advancement needed  
to prevent takeover (Ibid)

This warning appears to have come from a group of aliens called “*Royal Emerther.*” According to an online search, the term refers to Nordic aliens. Does this say that there is a looming threat from aliens? Is it instructing the nations to bring out the advanced technology they are keeping hidden? Could this advanced technology prevent a takeover by evil ETs?

As early as 1952, the ETs sent a warning to humanity through George Van Tassel. Now, I am not claiming that what these beings say is accurate; they could be wrong or just lying, but I found this one very interesting, considering the Exploded Planet Theory and that I believe Rahab was occupied by Satan, whom many people still refer to as Lucifer. The message came from Ashtar, a member of the “*Council Seven of Lights,*” which is pledged to “*save mankind from himself.*” The message was reported in Tassel’s book, *I Rode a Flying Saucer.*

“We are concerned with their deliberate determination to *extinguish humanity* and turn this planet into a cinder. . . . Our missions are peaceful, but this condition occurred before in this solar system and the planet Lu-

cifer was torn to bits. We are determined that it shall not happen again.” (page 31-32. Quoted in: Missler, *Alien Encounters*, page 187)

WOW, that is an incredible statement. Notice that he said, “*the planet Lucifer was torn to bits*, as though “Lucifer” were the name of the planet. It is likely saying that Satan’s planet exploded. This was given long before anyone had written any theories about Rahab being Satan’s planet, and long before we learned that Mars had been destroyed by nuclear weapons. The *Council Seven of Lights* might be another name for the Galactic Federation, which is claimed to exist.

The Trojan Horse gift and promise could come from evil aliens with the help of willing humans who will believe whatever those aliens tell them. Another message from the ETs was published in *Connecting Link Magazine*, which was supposedly a message from Ashtar, channeled through Yvonne Cole; at least it was claimed to be. In this message, the aliens are going to take over for our benefit:

Very soon your government, with the assistance of our Starseeds, will reveal to the world at large a truth that they have heretofore been guarding most effectively. Your government and the governments of the other countries have been interacting with what you call extraterrestrials for many years. . . . The public is now ready for the truth. The conditioning by television, newspapers, books, radio, and most importantly the light workers, has done its job and now it is safe to reveal to the inhabitants of planet Earth that we are here.” (Issue 23, page 12-13) (Quoted in, Missler, *Alien Encounters*, page 194-195)

The “Starseeds” must be hybrids, and the “light workers” must be the human members of the New Age movement who are working on behalf of the aliens. They are helping to spread the idea that aliens are our creators and that we should let them rule the planet. They are preparing mankind for public arrival and contact with aliens. Based on the warnings from good ETs and what we will learn from Dr. David Jacobs in the next chapter, much pain will result. They will make all sorts of great promises about how their knowledge and technology will benefit humanity, but their plan is to take full control of the planet and enslave the human race, as we will learn shortly.

The New Age followers do not want to follow Jesus as their Messiah, so they have adopted the aliens as Messiah-like beings that have come to save the world, which is something author Jacques Vallée also states:

I believe there is a machinery of mass manipulation behind the UFO phenomenon. It aims at social and political goals by diverting attention from some human problems and by providing a potential release for tensions caused by others. The contactees are a part of that machinery. They are helping to create a new form of belief: an expectation of actual contact among large parts of the public. In turn this expectation makes millions of people hope for the imminent realization of that age-old dream: salvation from above, surrender to the greater power of some wise navigators of the cosmos. (Jacques Vallee, *Messengers of Deception*, 1979 page 20) (Quoted in, Missler, *Alien Encounters*, page 294)

The Apostle Paul told us that those who refuse to believe the truth will be given a strong delusion to believe a lie (2 Thess. 2:11). It has happened before and is happening again.

## Chapter 15

### The Alien Agenda Against Humanity

*The evidence points to the fact that Roswell was a real incident and that indeed an alien craft did crash, and that material was recovered from that site. We all know that UFOs are real. All we need to ask is where do they come from, and what do they want? – Astronaut Edgar Mitchell*

This chapter merely gives a shortened account of this subject because it is vast and complex. I have read many books and watched many hours of video in my research on aliens and UFOs, so I cannot document every statement I make, but there will be some documentation. Many books are filled with abduction accounts, and there is so much more, such as the US government's connection, hidden underground alien bases, etc. I will only touch on these related subjects.

#### New Age Aliens

These beings have existed for millions of years, perhaps billions. Their knowledge has advanced beyond the point of comprehension for most humans. Scientists have long suspected that there could be 10 dimensions of the universe, *time* being the 4<sup>th</sup> dimension. Therefore, I believe that the aliens not only have knowledge of those dimensions but also use them at an advanced level. One of those dimensions is *thought*. Another is the spiritual realm. Having knowledge and control of those dimensions can explain their ability to travel through walls, implant thoughts into people's minds and use mind control.

Although there are several species of large-headed gray aliens, most of the aliens that have been seen and reportedly are engaging in abductions and running the alien-human hybrid program, are small gray beings that usually stand 3-4 feet tall. When asked, they have on occasion said that they are from here, and as it turns out, they are partly right. I

suspect they could be part-human and part-mantis insectoid. The insectoids, also called mantis aliens, look much like giant (7-12 feet tall) praying mantises; they appear to be the highest-ranking alien beings seen on the UFOs.

This is a picture of Thraxar, the ruling insectoid currently on Earth—just kidding, I invented him, but he looks very much like what eyewitnesses have seen onboard UFOs. The mantis aliens are described as wearing a cloak with a high collar, which seems to suggest their high status; otherwise, they are naked, as you would expect of an insect.



Not only have people seen grays, insectoids, and reptilians aboard UFOs but also tall, thin whites. They are not the same as the Nordic aliens. To be clear, the insectoids have learned how to reproduce those other types of aliens and can create as many of them as they want. Thus, a Nordic alien can be working with the reptilians, because it was birthed and raised with them.

The grays cannot live on Earth full time but only on their UFOs because they do not eat food; they absorb nutrients through their skin while sleeping in tubes filled with a clear liquid. They do most of the work of abducting and examining humans under the direction of the mantis insectoids, along with hybrids who are also onboard UFOs.

Those who have been abducted by aliens are usually called *abductees*, while the term *experiencer* refers to someone who is never taken aboard a UFO yet interacts with the aliens while on Earth. The disbelievers claim that the abductees and experiencers are merely imagining the events; the result of false memories planted by a hypnotherapist or just their own delusions. Because of his best-selling book *Communion*, Whitley Strieber received 300,000 letters from people who also claim to be abductees or experiencers (6/19/1997, *Coast to Coast*).

Many abductees and experiencers remember much of their encounters without hypnosis. So if only 10% of them are genuine encounters, then there are likely millions worldwide, because it has been occurring globally.

Because aliens can float through walls, Christians call them demons, but the Christians fail to notice that the aliens also float humans through walls when they abduct people. This tells me they can use the power of multiple dimensions. Sources believe that they are utilizing actual technology because the abductee is sometimes taken to the other side of the house, where he/she can be in a more direct line with the UFO, suggesting that some sort of tractor beam is used to float the individuals into the UFO.

However, I believe the aliens can use their minds to go through walls (evidence will be shown shortly).

I will not begin to speculate on how it works; let's just say that by using other dimensions they can not only float through walls, but UFOs have been seen to fly into the base of a volcano where there is NO opening; they simply fly right in. This would also explain how they can instantly disappear.

They not only communicate telepathically, but also possess powerful psychic abilities. These beings can *tune in* to people who are thinking about aliens or spirit-guides and desiring contact. They can also engage in what is called highly accurate "*remote viewing*." They can implant thoughts and desires into the minds of abductees, and they are also able to download the entire memory bank of a person. They have performed these actions to many people, mostly while on board a UFO.

At midnight on New Year's Eve 2010, New Age believer Stuart Davis was meditating and requesting to meet his spirit guides. He was expecting a Buddhist monk or some other person to show up; instead, an 8-foot mantis alien showed up and stood at the end of his bed wearing a purple cloak. The mantis shot him with a "current" that lasted 10-15 seconds that was like "a symphony." "*When it's done the thought, 'Remember who you work for,' lands in my head.*" Then it departs.

Since then, Stuart has written and spoken about the encounter. A few years later he saw a vision of a movie in his head in which a praying mantis insect inspires the lead character. "*I also feel clear that this movie was somehow inside of this signal that the mantis shot into my body on New Year's Eve.*" ([https:// aliensandartists.podbean.com/e/man-meets-mantis](https://aliensandartists.podbean.com/e/man-meets-mantis), and [www.aliensandartists.com](http://www.aliensandartists.com))

Later, Stuart went to a Buddhist shaman who helped him channel the mantis, who told him that when he said, "*Remember who you work for,*" it was not saying that Stuart worked for the mantis, but, "*Remember*

*my own deepest values; follow them, that will protect me and guide me.”* This, of course, is very New Age.

As you can see, the aliens seem to be in line with the New Age movement. New Agers are very open to believing everything that these beings tell them. I do NOT believe that the coming Antichrist will be an alien, as many Christians believe; however, that does not mean the aliens will not attempt to bring a great deception upon the world, or attempt to take over the world. There is actual evidence they are indeed planning a great deception and takeover.

Here is an example of aliens implanting a thought into someone’s mind: Nadine Lalich reported that after an abduction, she suddenly had a strong urge to move from California to New Mexico, where she had many more abductions. (*The Experiencer Group Roundtable* (podcast): Episode 3. [www.owltail.com/people/Z9tET-nadine-lalich/appearances](http://www.owltail.com/people/Z9tET-nadine-lalich/appearances))

Another experiencer on the above podcast said:

I will go to my grave, under threat of losing my life, claim[ing] with 100% certainty, that f--ing alien bug that was on my bed and on my chest with a hand on either side of my pillow, I'm sorry, that [actually] happened! (Karin Austin)

Just when I thought I had learned all I was going to learn about this subject, I learned something that totally freaked me out. I will not even tell you everything; you will not believe it. I will only say that the appearances of the mantis bug seem to be increasing. They claim they seeded the praying mantis insect on Earth millions of years ago, and it is supposedly related to the big alien insectoid. People who have been visited by the big one start being visited by the little ones, who will look right at them. Stuart Davis also began encountering the small praying mantis insects, and felt like the insects were recognizing him.

William Konkolesky has been visited by the little gray alien beings since he was a small child. When he was a teenager, he was aboard a craft and saw a mantis that was--

. . . very terrifying, very menacing. It had this vibe that felt like it could simply eat my soul, and it gave me the message to just basically to play along; don't question, just follow the rules and I will be okay. (*Experiencers Speak 3 - William Konkolesky Part 1*, YouTube, Starborn Support Videos)

Nadine said in a podcast that while she was on a craft and having great fear, she was loudly saying the Lord’s Prayer, and a mantis came

up to her and telepathically told her that, “*we were all part of this one energy, this one life that we call God, and that God expands as we expand.*” (The ET Presence podcast, 4 Oct 2020, [www.owltail.com/people/Z9tET-nadine-lalich/appearances](http://www.owltail.com/people/Z9tET-nadine-lalich/appearances))

From what the mantis aliens have been telling people, they are positioning themselves as a godlike creature to us humans. They appear to have put the idea into the mind of Jaclyn Smith that they existed before the physical universe. She said, “*Long before this universe ever was, they were.*” She also claims to have mantis DNA in her. In other words, she is a hybrid (*Man Meets Mantis*, YouTube video, Stuart Davis Media).

Researcher Budd Hopkins related a mantis encounter given to him by Karla Turner, a writer and experiencer. She was taken out of her bedroom in the middle of the night:

In one of her first conscious memories, she was outside alone in the middle of the night. She was five years old and looking up at a six-to-seven-foot-tall praying mantis towering over her. When she cried out that she wanted her mother, the creature said to the child: “I am your mother.” (Budd Hopkins, *Sight Unseen*, page 327)

If these beings were actually as good as they want us to believe, they would not be doing such evil to so many people who suffer great trauma during the abductions, often suffering lifelong mental and emotional problems. Budd Hopkins said:

The twenty-seven years I have spent working with abductees, listening to their traumatic encounters, and trying to help them heal a lifetime of psychic damage, have left me hardened to reassuring talk of “beings of light” practicing benevolent “tough love.” I have seen too much pain . . . (Ibid, page 384)

One morning at about 5 a.m. in July 2020, Paul Froggatt, of Stoke Newington, East London, was cycling home from his night job in Warwick, England, when he spotted a UFO hovering in the sky. He stopped to take some photos of it and noticed that it began rotating. Feeling uneasy about it, he quickly biked away into a wooded area, which obstructed his view of the UFO. He turned a corner and saw what he described as a “*humanoid praying mantis*” that could communicate with him telepathically. He said it stood at least 7 feet tall:

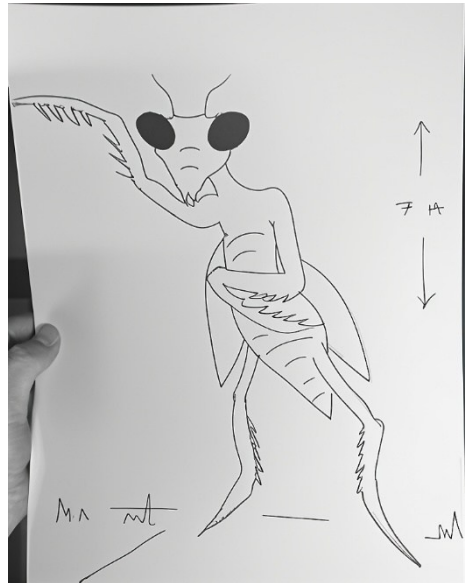
Paul said: “It sounds crazy but I felt I could sense its feelings towards me and it was just like pure alien hatred. . . . I felt like it could read my mind

and I could read its. My fear was replaced with completely alien thoughts of utter hatred and evil I felt projected from this thing. I suddenly snapped out of this hypnotic kind of state and it made a step back as if it was gonna pounce on me.” (Torre, Berny. *Horrified dog food factory worker ‘saw 7ft telepathic alien mantis’ while cycling home*, Jan. 30, 2021. <https://www.dailystar.co.uk/>)

The mantis was probably shocked that Paul was able to break the mind-lock it had placed on him. Immediately upon breaking free, Paul fled. When he told his coworkers at the factory, he was ridiculed and laughed at so badly he had to quit his job.

Paul drew a picture of the mantis alien he saw:—

Whitley Strieber wrote several books that chronicle his abduction experiences. On a podcast interview with Linda Moulton Howe (2017), he said he was being watched by two human-looking aliens (they were hybrids, which I will refer to as human ETs, or HETs) at his condo in San Antonio. He encountered one on the sidewalk and said there was just a “*wall of hate*” coming from this HET. A few weeks later, he went into a nearby convenience store, and the same guy was in there walking out with an armload of cigarette cartons, which he had not paid for, but the clerk was letting him do it. In other words, the clerk had been mind-controlled to allow the theft. There are other examples of this in the various literature on aliens.



### **Abductions and the Planned Takeover**

One of the world’s leading authorities on alien abductions is Dr. David M. Jacobs, retired Associate Professor of History at Temple University in Philadelphia. He has been researching aliens for over 50 years and has authored academic papers and books on the subject of abductions. He has personally conducted nearly 1,000 hypnotic regressions on over 145 people, which reveals what the abductees have learned about the aliens. His website is [www.ufoabduction.com](http://www.ufoabduction.com).

People from all walks of life and socio-economic backgrounds report having been abducted, both male and female, and the primary motive is to create hybrids. But there is so much more to their plan. I cannot relate everything that he and other researchers have learned about them as they go into great detail, but I will give the key points that are relevant to this book.

Even though abductions to produce hybrids have been happening for centuries, there is no way to know if the aliens doing it back then are the same ones doing it today. It appears that the present-day hybrid program was started by the mantis insectoids.

The grays lack emotions and empathy, like insects. Although some reportedly wear jumpsuits, most are naked. They lie to people, saying that they need our DNA because they can no longer reproduce, but since they can make clones, then they could make a million of themselves. In reality, the grays were never able to reproduce for the same reasons that a mule cannot. Many people do not know that a mule is the offspring of a horse and donkey and so cannot reproduce. Since the grays have no sex organs and cannot reproduce, this seems like evidence of being a hybrid of two different types of being.

If you look at a human and one of those mantis aliens, you can see how the grays could be a mix of insectoid and human. The mantis insectoids are making a whole new being, a human-mantis hybrid that can live on Earth and replace humanity; that is their plan (evidence below). I heard a fellow online (I failed to note his name) say the gray aliens told him, when he asked, that they were the children of our children. That does not mean they have come back in time to the present day; it means they used human DNA in a lab to create a cross between a mantis and a human, then implanted those embryos into unsuspecting women, only to later remove them. This is how the first generation of grays was born.



In 2001, then CIA analyst John Ramirez was invited by an officer at the CIA to attend a symposium presented on UFOs in Virginia by

the CIA's historian. John said he learned they had collected tissue samples from the alien bodies from the early crashes, and then decades later they were able to test the aliens' DNA. It turns out they had "*human genetic markers in their DNA. . . . Hybrids are real, that's not a conspiracy theory.*" (Ex-CIA Officer Confirms Alien Hybrids Exist - John Ramirez - DEBRIEFED ep. 42, June 20, 2025, Area52)

Researchers discovered over twenty years ago that the grays only sleep 2-3 hours a day and do nothing but work the remainder of the time. The next generation of the hybrids still could not reproduce, and some had deformities. After several more generations of selective breeding, they now look just like humans with human emotions and sex organs, but with alien abilities. The aliens believe they are creating an upgraded human, a "*superior model*."

The aliens and hybrids possess what Hollywood movies would call "superpowers" or "abilities." They can read your mind; they can implant false memories and block memories of being abducted. They can make you see things that appear real but are not. They can move objects with their minds. They came from another star system and have no plans to return; their plan is to take over Earth.

Some abductees were shown a future war with bombs going off, earthquakes, and black skies, and were told that it would be humanity's fault. However, the aliens are going to step in and save humanity before it happens. They have "programmed" many people to assist them when they attempt the takeover, which they call "*the change*."

Some abductees have been brainwashed to carry out certain tasks when the command is given, and they will do so without even knowing what they are doing; it is like a powerful form of hypnosis. The orders that people have been given to carry out cannot be revealed through hypnosis, so we do not know the details; the abductees are merely told that they will remember when the time is right and know what they are supposed to do to help the aliens when *the change* comes.

So it is no surprise that many abductees and New Age practitioners are promoting this coming change as a great thing for the world. But they are greatly deceived and being used by Satan. Even if these insectoids don't have Fallen angel spirits but mere animal spirits, they are doing Satan's work by causing people to stop believing in God and Jesus, which is humanity's only way of Salvation; being reconnected to the family of God in heaven.

People have been shown images of a glorious future with the insectoids in control, followed by the human-looking hybrids, then the brain-washed, mind-controlled abductees, followed by everyone else.

One abductee said:

“. . . the Biblical statement is coming to mind, it sounds like, ‘And they looked upon their work, and it was good.’” (Jacobs, *The THREAT: Revealing the Secret Alien Agenda*, chapter 12, audio version.)

Dr. Jacob’s said:

After the change there will be only one form of government. The insect-like aliens will be in complete control. . . . I view the alien agenda as an asteroid hurtling toward Earth, discovered too late for intervention. (Ibid, chapter 13)

In an interview with L. A. Marzulli, Dr. Jacobs said:

I desperately wish it not to be true. I do not think about the future with much hope. When I was a child I had a future with much hope. . . . Now I fear for the future of my own children. (*The Alien Interviews*, L. A. Marzulli, page 24)

The only people with hope are genuine Christians who know that God’s plan will not be derailed! (See chapter 18 for details on God’s plan to save humanity.)

UFO researcher Joe Jordan told L.A. Marzulli that some people have stopped their abduction experience by rebuking the devil in the name of Jesus. A simple prayer will not stop it; it must be done using the authority God has given us to rebuke demonic powers.

After ten years of documenting cases, we have worked with well over three hundred testimonies of stopping the experience in the name and authority of Jesus Christ. (*The Alien Interviews*, Marzulli, page 30)

Yes, I agree; however, I have heard reports of times when rebuking them did not work. In like manner, some people cannot cast out demons; the demons will reply, “*Jesus I know and Paul I know, but who are you?*” (Acts 19:15). In order to rebuke evil aliens, you must be prayed up and filled up with the Holy Spirit. The name of Jesus is not a magic word that anyone can use to ward off evil; it is only powerful when used by those who are strong Christians and know the authority we have in Christ.

Some of the human-alien hybrids--the HETs--are living on Earth today as they promote acceptance of the coming “change.” They are promoting the idea that we humans are getting an “upgrade,” and our world will be taken to the next level. While in reality, the insectoids are

being given an upgrade with human bodies and emotions; otherwise, why are they creating the hybrids?

The abductees reported that the grays, and likely the insectoids also, have no emotions and cannot experience love, fun, or happiness. (But they appear to have plenty of hate.) They know that because humans have emotions, we are superior to them, and is a major reason they hate us. We also have this great planet, which is likely better than theirs; otherwise, they would not be planning to stay.

If they merely needed some of our DNA to survive, they should have been able to gather enough centuries ago. If the insectoids are newcomers, they have at least been here for decades which is more than enough time to obtain enough DNA.

According to Nadine Lalich, they are coming to Earth to live here permanently. During an abduction on Feb. 1, 2003, she was on a UFO with a group of other abducted humans who were shown a holographic 3D image hovering in the air. They watched as a large machine descended, then spun around as it dug itself into the ground until it was hidden there, in “*an area that looked to be outside of Las Vegas, Nevada.*” Once buried, it began to spin within the cavern:

Several Tall White entities in the room indicated telepathically that the technology could be used to control large numbers of people within an entire city. Their ability to control us is more than just through implants or mind scan practices. This underground technology is the most powerful method they have for mind control. They said there would be a mass migration to Earth by several off-planet species in the not too distant future, around 2027, and they will allegedly use the device to control the humans here. They also indicated that their occupation would begin in the larger urban cities and later, over time, in smaller rural communities across the globe. (Lalich, *Evolution: Coming to Terms with the ET Presence*, page 112)

Nadine said they had programmed her to assist them when they attempt their takeover. She was shown strange hieroglyphic characters:

Strange as it may sound, I think they were programming my mind with information that might be retrieved or activated at a later date. (Ibid, p. 78)

They want me to be ready in a way that serves them. They don't necessarily care if it helps me. They're not concerned about me. (Ibid, p. 108)

He communicated telepathically, telling me that I was one of a group of people they had been working with for several years. A significant event would be happening in the future, and we would be called upon to act as

liaisons between the aliens and humans. He also said that the little wars we have on our planet are nothing, and we have no idea what a big war is. (Ibid, 116)

Notice that he said that “*a significant event would happen in the future*” and the abductees were going to be “*liaisons between the aliens and humans.*” This is the *change* that others reported.

So if they think our wars are “nothing,” just little wars, and they have had “big” wars, who were they warring against and how many billions died? That statement is scary. Is that why they came to Earth? Did another alien race defeat and take over one of their planets, so they want ours? It appears that Mars and Rahab are not the only planets to have engaged in interplanetary war.

The above is different from what most abductees report, which is that they are shown scenes of war and are told:

“The human race is violent; what they know and what they do best is war! . . . But we have good news for you! We are going to change all this!” (Bauer, *Alien Abductions*, page 7)

The above words were spoken to Penelope Gambier, who came from France to the US. The aliens who abducted her communicated in perfect French. They said she had been chosen to have a hybrid baby and was shown a picture of it:

“This is your baby and our baby. He is going to become very important, and he will rule many lands.” (Ibid, page 8)

Do they feel justified in taking this planet because humans are going to have a major war? That seems doubtful, considering their “little wars” comment. One abductee reported that she was told the aliens’ home planet was invaded and they suffered their own Armageddon:

Jennie’s alien abductor asserted that the dying world he was showing her was actually his own. He went on to explain through mental impressions that his home planet had been invaded by other aliens from other planets. His race had mounted a massive defense to repel the invaders and were successful in driving them away, but their planet had been completely devastated in the process. Things were so bad that the native inhabitants had to literally go underground and live in subterranean dwellings. (Bauer, *Alien Abductions*, page 64)

Now we know the real reason they want to take Earth! Their world was destroyed by invaders. They looked around and found humans living here on Earth who had just entered the technological age and knew

they could easily dominate us. Then they gave us a sob story of *We need your DNA to help our dying race survive*; no, they need our DNA to create hybrids to replace humans.

This also indicates that some of them are indeed lying because some abductees were told that there are many habitable worlds, and Earth just happens to be located in a good place in the universe. Since they can travel any distance across the universe in a short time, they don't need to take Earth; they want Earth because we do not have the technology to defeat them. Though we have ISVs, we still cannot utilize multiple dimensions of the universe using our minds. We are also likely behind them in many other ways as yet unknown.

Are you getting the feeling that we are living through a sci-fi movie? There is an old saying that goes, "*Truth is stranger than fiction.*" But do not fear; even though this chapter contains scary information, there is hope.

### **Hybrids on Earth**

Because the abduction-hybrid program has been going on for many decades now, many late-stage hybrids that look exactly like humans have become old enough to integrate into human society, and they are walking among us today.

The testimony of independent abductees indicates that there is a growing subpopulation on Earth made up of [human-ETs]. (Hopkins, *Sight Unseen*, page 224)

There are actually two types of HETs; one type is discussed below, which are those who were raised on board UFOs then come and live on Earth. The other type are born and raised here on Earth to human parents and likely are raised not knowing that they are HETs.

When a HET reaches 18 or 19 years of age, those who look and act human move to Earth. For a HET to properly integrate, they need the help of many different abductees who are repeatedly abducted over several decades and used as teachers. The abductees are required to instruct the children and teenagers, and even the 20-somethings, on everything, from sex to teeth brushing, to how to greet their fellow workers when they arrive for work each morning. But in spite of this instruction, there is still a ton of stuff they don't know, and each one does not have the exact same knowledge/education about human society as the next.

So how can you spot one? Having read many detailed testimonies, I will synthesize the information and share some suggestions.

They were bred to have mostly human bodies but insectoid minds, so although they do have emotions, they are subdued compared to humans. When they smile, it is mostly because they were taught when they should smile. So, they do not have as much personality as a full human. If a group of people hear a joke or see something shocking, they will have a strong reaction to it, like an outburst of laughter or surprise. But the Human Extraterrestrials will likely barely register anything on their faces. If they do register anything, it will be confusion because they will not understand why the humans laughed or were surprised.

They have great difficulty understanding jokes and figures of speech like, “lighten up” or “take a walk.” Although they can learn figures of speech, they do not enter terrestrial life with this knowledge. They desperately want to fit into human society, but can have difficulty because of their social ineptitude. Yet—

Socialization—the ability to mingle among humans undetected—is an extremely important goal of the aliens. (Jacobs, *Walking Among Us*, page 93)

One of the abductees suggested to a mantis insectoid that the hybrids should watch movies and TV, which would teach them a great deal about human society, allowing them to fit in easier. She was told that it is a waste of time; the HETs should be busy working. This tells me that the insectoids are not as smart as they think they are. If the insectoids were genuinely intelligent, they would have the hybrids grow up knowing how to use a water faucet, how to use a keyboard, etc. They are not trained in human life growing up on board the mothership, yet are expected to learn it all before they can integrate.

On board the UFO, they are assigned jobs and have no idle time. The hybrids wear different uniforms based on their job functions, so they know nothing about fashion, style, or even shopping. They spend most of their time working, never relaxing or having fun. Their preferred method of communication is by telepathy. The HETs also do not make any decisions but only follow the rules of their very structured lives. They might fit in better in the military.

The aliens are known to take a small group of HETs on a field trip to a park and sit on a bench to watch people. They learn a lot by watching people. Sometimes the children are taken to a park and allowed to play with human children.

Another step in the process is going inside the home of one of their

human trainer-abductees. They will look inside of the refrigerator, look inside of the dishwasher, and ask basic questions like, *How does it work?* Or, *What are in the cans of food in the cabinet, etc.?* They are full of questions about everything under the sun, like a 5-year-old. What is an orange? How often do you eat one? How do you peel it? Several were in a home and were asking about the TV and satellite dish:

Not really interested in the shows, but more like, "How many channels? Are they all different? Does each show have a purpose? How many are you permitted to watch?" . . . They want to know what the numbers mean. . . . They want to know if there are consequences for missing something that's important. (Jacobs, *Walking Among Us*, page 108-109))

Before being allowed to live on Earth, they must learn to dress normally and pass an inspection conducted by several abductees. Those who fail are given permanent jobs on the ship. One woman saw a boy wearing jeans and wingtip shoes and told him that males rarely wear those shoes anymore. They can show up at the trainer's home unannounced in the middle of the night; one woman was upset and refused to help:

Angered at her obstinacy, they threatened her with the destruction of her house and she saw [was shown] mental images of her house demolished. (Ibid, page 122)

I recently saw a news report of a house that had exploded, and it made me wonder if it was caused by evil aliens because someone refused to cooperate with them.

HETs who pass inspection are allowed to move to Earth. An older one goes and secures an apartment, which several HETs move into as they gradually integrate into society while still learning as much as they can along the way.

With no free time of their own on the ship, they have never seen a movie or listened to music and know nothing about art, literature, or entertainment. There is so much that they do not know that encountering one is like meeting someone who was raised in the jungle by missionary parents. They have heard of this or that from abductees but know very little about most things in our modern society today.

If you meet someone in their early 20s who has never seen a YouTube video, it should be a red flag that they are not of this world. If they ask you what the difference is between a regular movie and a "classic movie," and they are not from another country, be suspicious.

When they come to live on Earth, they have never been in a swimming pool or lake, but might take a dip in the apartment complex pool at night.

If they do not recognize a picture of Superman or Spider-Man, run! If you are at a party and an argument breaks out between two people, both individuals are likely NOT HETs, because they are subdued in their emotions. But if someone walks up to one of those in the argument and they suddenly calm down and turn and walk away, the person who approached is likely a HET because they can control people with their minds. The closer they get to your face, the better they can read your mind and put thoughts into your mind. They can even bring a human to an amazing orgasm just with their minds! (No touching involved.)

However, they can get upset in certain situations and do have strong sexual urges, which they are allowed to fully satisfy and have multiple partners among the humans. They are not allowed to have sex or mate with other HETs.

If you encounter someone who is 25 years old and has never been to a live concert, they could be a HET. If you hear a song on the radio that goes, “*come with me, little girl, on a magic carpet ride*,” and they ask you what a magic carpet is, slip out the back, Jack; make a new plan, Stan.

If they ask you what a violin sounds like, or they point to a picture of someone holding a saxophone and ask, “What is that?” You might want to move away slowly. They know little of enjoyment, or happiness, or love. Growing up on the mothership, they are rarely hugged and consider a normal hug that is *not* part of having sex “distasteful” (Jacobs, *Walking Among Us*, page 90). And here is a big one: they don’t sleep like normal humans, 6-8 hours per day, but they only need 2-3 hours.

In the mid-1990s, I was in training for a new job in Texas, and a lady working in management said she only slept two hours per night. Her husband was a manager at Wal-Mart, and she would get up, close the door, and do all of her housework while he slept. I told her she needed to tell the government about her ability so they could study her DNA because it would be great if we had soldiers who only needed two hours of sleep a night, and she was very adamant that the government NOT study her DNA. I asked if either of her parents were like that, and

she said she did not know her parents. This tells me she was likely a HET raised on a UFO.

The icing on the cake was that she had never heard of Jesus Christ. How could a woman in her 30s in Texas, not from China, Japan, or another country, have never heard of Jesus? So I thought I would witness to her and told her Jesus was the Son of God and mentioned the prophecies about his return. She had no interest until I got to the part where the prophecies say that there will be massive disasters, like asteroid impacts, during the Great Tribulation, along with WW3 right before the return of Christ. She then said she would look into it.

In the many books describing these beings, it has become apparent to me that even though they learn quickly and have great memories, they lack good sense and deductive reasoning. For example, they go to a park in the middle of the night and say, "*Why is there no one here?*" They even wonder why anyone would want to go to a park!

One trainer-abductee went to pick up a pizza one evening and later realized that it had taken an hour and 45 minutes when it should have only taken 20-30 minutes. So she went to her therapist and discovered the truth. On the way to pick up the pizza, she "knew" she needed to do something and drove to pick up one of the overseer hybrids, who told her to drive to a store where other HETs were waiting, and they loaded the back of the SUV with stuff they had purchased. After they unloaded everything, she picked up her pizza and drove home and had no memory of it, as usual, until the therapy session (Jacobs, *Walking Among Us*, pp 134-135). This means that she had been previously "programmed" to drive the SUV to pick up that overseer beforehand and then had carried out the command. This is an example of how they can control and program people's minds.

They can also go to a store and openly take what they want without a problem because they can use mind control to ensure no one objects (Ibid, p. 168). However, it's likely they only do this in small stores with one or two clerks. In a large store with many workers and security personnel watching on cameras, they likely just pay for what they need.

I saw a video taken from a security camera outside of a small convenience store in the middle of the night. It showed a guy walking right through the front doors with a flash of light. His body appears to partly dissolve, which apparently allowed him to walk through the doors. The

timestamp on the video jumped from 2016 to 2019 and back again. The video came out many years before AI:



The fellow apparently had the ability to utilize other dimensions of the universe at will, which then caused the time shift and allowed him to walk through the doors.

If this information does not scare the pants off you, let me explain just how dangerous and scary this is. When a hybrid boy is dating a human girl, he can use his mind so that she gives him sex any time he wants it. And she is rewarded with powerful orgasms. They can show up at a news producer's house or office and use mind-control to tell him to do a news story that debunks any notion that people are being abducted by aliens. They do not want this information to be widely known. But they can also tell someone to get a gun and kill himself or someone else! Those working for a large corporation can telepathically manipulate the boss to give them a promotion.

### **Men in Black**

In case you do not know who the Men in Black (MIB) are, they usually show up at someone's house or business and tell them not to talk about the UFO they saw. They have even been known to threaten people. Several people who once spoke about UFOs have been murdered, and most people believe it was MIB.

They are described as fairly tall, trim, often with black hats, and always in black suits with white shirts. They also have very pale skin and expressionless faces.

Security camera footage from Anchorage, Alaska, shows what appears to be one of the Men in Black. All that is known about the video is what we see: the clerk apparently tells the man to leave and points to the door; he does not leave, so she reaches into the drawer and pulls out a gun.

All the while, he does not react at all except to raise his right hand, at which time she removes the clip from the gun and sets them both on the counter.





Then he points to her purse sitting on the floor next to her chair, which he could not even see from his vantage point. She reaches down, picks up what appears to be a camera or wallet, and proceeds to walk out of the business, and he follows. She was clearly mind-controlled. Was she also taken aboard a UFO?



As you might suspect, women have been used for sex without their knowledge, even during a job interview.

Some blurry black and white security footage was leaked back in 2024 or early 2025, which showed a fellow who may have been a Man in Black; for sure he had the appearance of one and had supernatural power. He also murdered a fellow just by raising his left hand to waist level for a second.

The fellow on the right appears to be unhappy as he gestures, and then the man in black raises his left hand, and the fellow collapses on the floor and then flails his arms and legs in apparent agony.

The man in black just looks at him, then calmly walks away. Then the man on the floor erupts, as though he were a bag of dust that suddenly burst. It appears to be similar to spontaneous combustion, but the dust appears white or a light color, not black, as happens during spontaneous combustion. The man's body turned into light-colored dust that sprayed up:



For many years the MIB were believed to have been from the government, but the best evidence suggests that they are aliens or hybrids. Actor and producer Dan Aykroyd claimed that while developing a program about aliens, two MIB appeared and instructed him to abandon the project. When they started walking away, he turned his head for a brief second, and when he looked back, they and the car they had arrived in had disappeared.

### **Mental and Physical Problems**

Bud Hopkins said in his book, *Witnessed: The True Story of the Brooklyn Bridge UFO Abductions*:

Everything I have learned in the 20 years of research into the UFO abduction phenomenon leads me to conclude that the aliens' central purpose is not to teach us about taking better care of the environment; instead, all of the evidence points to their being here to carry out a complex breeding experiment in which they seem to be working to create a hybrid species, a mix of human and alien characteristics. A careful reading of the various witnesses' accounts suggests that here, as in many earlier cases, reproductive issues appear far more frequently than alien ecological concerns. (page 378) (Quoted *Alien Encounters*, Missler, page 118)

The fact that they had to go through many generations of selective breeding to get good alien-human hybrids is absolute proof that they did NOT create humans in the first place, as they claim. If they did that thousands of years ago, why did they show up here as insectoids and need to create a human-alien hybrid through many generations of breeding? However, there certainly could have been some aliens who tampered with the DNA of early hominids, just as they are tampering with human DNA today.

They obviously want this planet for themselves and are merging their race with humans so they can take over. Because the hybrids are not fully human, they are deficient in ethics and morality in ways that make them a great danger to the future of all humanity. They lack a moral compass and are willing to do whatever is necessary to accomplish their goal of global domination. They see themselves as the dominant species and humans as the inferior species, like comparing humans with chimps.

Some abductees actually believe everything they are told by the aliens. One abductee reported:

He put his eyes close to mine and I felt intense love coming from him. I have never experienced such a powerful feeling directed at me before.

He told me that I am part of them—that I am family. I have no reason to be fearful or to distrust them. They mean no harm. (Anonymous) (*Experiencers Speak 1 - Kathleen Marden*, Nov. 30, 2015, YouTube, Starborn Support Videos)

Though aliens appear to care about the pain and fear of the abductees, it's only to keep them calm and manageable. Aliens do not experience love, but they can cause humans to feel love from the aliens to manipulate us. They do not genuinely care about us; it's all about them. Human-looking hybrids who still live aboard UFOs have gone into women's homes at night and gang-raped them and even their children, then laughed about it, knowing the humans will not remember it, except under hypnosis. They have "*little conscience*."

Even though many people remember their abductions, many never do; they likely just block it all out, like humans tend to do with other painful or frightening memories. But a few people do remember being abducted and are unable to handle it, which results in mental problems that can cause them to end up in a psychiatric hospital. I have also seen reports of suicide.

"Before we allow ourselves to believe in the benevolence of the alien interpretation we should ask, do enlightened beings need to use the cover of night to perform good deeds? Do they need to paralyze us and render us helpless to resist? Do angels need to steal our fetuses? Do they need to manipulate our children's genitals and probe our rectums? Are fear, pain and deception consistent with high spiritual motives?" (Dr. Karla Turner, 1948-1996) Experiencer, psycho therapist. (*Experiencers Speak 1 - Kathleen Marden*, Nov. 30, 2015, YT, Starborn Support Videos)

Reports from those who have been repeatedly abducted show that, as a result of communicating with the aliens telepathically during the abductions, some of them can continue to read the thoughts of people around them for several hours afterwards. Some of them develop actual psychic abilities, such as in this case reported by a longtime UFO researcher who became a New Age channeler:

Evelyn began to channel Ashtar. I've investigated other cases involving people who have encounters, and then start channeling, or giving psychic readings or doing hands-on-healing. It happens often enough that I'm convinced it's one of the ET's primary agendas. (Dennett, *Wondrous: 25 True UFO Encounters*, page 190)

Because of developing psychic abilities, some people leave their religion behind and join the New Age movement. Is this part of their plan? I am beginning to suspect that they may have originated the first thoughts and ideas that created the movement; in which case, the New Age Movement is the actual religion of the aliens. They at least recognize that they can use the movement for their benefit.

It seems that when women are repeatedly impregnated and have the hybrid fetus removed by the aliens, it scars the uterus and causes bleeding. Therefore, they often suffer from gynecological problems, which causes them to need hysterectomies.

Bud Hopkins reported the case of Phyllis, who never had children, and the reason was that she had a great fear of it being taken from her. This would seem to be a very strange fear were it not for all the evidence that indicates she had been repeatedly abducted and used to grow many fetuses for the aliens. When she was only in her 30s, she needed to have a hysterectomy:

"The walls of my uterus were scarified up one side and down the other--and in folds of the lining where you'd never expect to see scarring. The doctor said, and he wasn't joking, 'It looks like you've had forty or fifty pregnancies.'" (Hopkins, *Sight Unseen*, page 337)

I never suspected that my own mother, now deceased, could have been abducted until I learned all the above while researching this book. I now believe she experienced repeated abductions because she exhibited several indicators, one being that in her old age, she had nightmares of being menaced by a pack of dogs and would yell out in her sleep, "*Get out of here! Get out of here!*" They sometimes cause people to see animals instead of aliens during an encounter.

Another is that she had actual psychic ability, which she never told anyone about. I figured out that she had this special "gift," and she admitted it. Being a devout Christian, she believed it was from God, but I disagree, as it caused many problems over the years when she would claim to "just know" something without explanation (she was also not totally correct with what she "knew"). She also needed a hysterectomy in her 40s. She said her uterus was badly scarred, and the doctors did not understand why.

Finally, she had seen a UFO, I assume, in her youth. People who have been abducted often remember nothing except for having seen the UFO.

## Chapter 16

### More Alien Info and Insights

*As all regions below are replenished with living creatures... so may the heavens above be replenished with beings whose nature we do not understand. He that shall well consider the strange and wonderful nature of life and the frame of the Animals, will think nothing beyond the possibility of nature, nothing too hard for the omnipotent power of God. And as the Planets remain in their orbs, so may any other bodies subsist at any distance from the earth, and much more may beings, who have sufficient power of self motion, move whether they will, and continue in any regions of the heavens whatever, . . . -- Isaac Newton (quoted by Frank Edward Manuel, *The Religion of Isaac Newton*, 1977)*

### Different Races and MILABS

Many abductees report seeing several different races on board the UFOs who were working together for the same agenda. The reptilians stand at least 6 feet tall. Nadine Lalich said she saw one wearing a metal breastplate like a Roman soldier. They are “*commanding and aggressive, suggesting a warrior-life persona*” (*Evolution*, p. 12).

There have been reports of violent reptilian behavior toward humans and, on occasion, they engaged in sexual relations with human members of the opposite sex. (Ibid)

I have read several such reports of reptilians and hybrids having sex with abductees on UFOs; in other words, the humans were raped. The abductees are always under some kind of mind control, which renders them unable to resist. This means that ALL of the aliens and hybrids on those UFOs are perfectly fine with raping humans.

Nadine said that once she began to speak publicly about her repeated abductions, she was also abducted several times by the military,

called MILABS (military abductions). However, the purpose of these abductions was very different from the alien abductions.

These MILABS did not use mind control but employed drugs; they entered through the front door and used silent helicopters or UFOs. She was taken to underground bases where she saw humans working with aliens, hybrids, and human clones working on UFOs (not in UFOs).

While at the bases, she was asked questions such as, *What type of UFO were you on? What did the aliens look like? What did they tell you?* This information tells me two things: The questions tell me that the US military is NOT working with the aliens who are conducting the abductions; and the aliens in the underground bases indicate that the US military is indeed working with aliens and has UFOs. Perhaps the aliens who are working with the military are defectors who do not like the idea of taking over the planet. Or perhaps those assisting the military were captured from crashed UFOs and agreed to help.

I have thousands of files on my hard drive that I saved over a period of 25 years for research. I was looking through a folder and came across an article about a UFO having been brought down with an experimental laser cannon in 1989 in South Africa. The craft was turned over to the US government, and on board were found bluish/grayish aliens. I assumed this was likely another fake story, but not 10 minutes later, I was watching a video on YouTube, and what do I see? An actual dead bluish/grayish alien. The blood vessels were just under the tight skin, and you could see it had red blood.



The Tall Whites on the UFOs are not the so-called Nordics. The Tall Whites look mostly human but are very thin, and have skin so

white it is like a piece of paper or chalk; literally white. Whereas Caucasian people have more pinkish skin by comparison. The Nordics are reportedly tall and blonde and look like very attractive humans. The Nordics are supposedly protecting Earth from the hostile races. But if that is the case, they are doing a poor job of it; are they going to wage war against the insectoids and reptilians when they attempt to take over?

A South African Zulu shaman, named Credo Mutwa, is on video saying that the gray aliens have inflicted terror upon many people for generations:

This creature is known by the Zulu speaking people of South Africa as a Mantindani. [which] comes from the verb, *umanTinDane*, means *to abuse, to fiddle with, and to torture* by interfering with the victim's genitals and other private parts. This is an exact description of the Mantindani. It does exactly that. For hundreds of years, even mighty nations such as the Zulus, even powerful warrior nations such as the Botswanas and Kozas, lived in mortal fear of these creatures. (*Mystic Visions and Alien Enigmas: Credo Mutwa's Extraordinary Tales*, YT)



### The Sad Christian View

I have quoted several times from renowned Bible teacher Chuck Missler, who did a detailed study of UFOs and aliens and wrote a best-selling book called *Alien Encounters: The Secret Behind the UFO Phenomenon*. Although he presented some good observations and evidence, he ultimately reached a shockingly sad conclusion:

There will be those who will no doubt argue that Satan and his cohorts are incapable of creating alien ships and masquerading as extraterrestrials. However, when we look carefully at the capabilities of angelic beings . . . we find that angelic beings have extraordinary ability and power to manipulate matter within our space-time domain. (page 302)

He even went so far as to say that Satan is going to have sex with a human woman, and she will give birth to the Antichrist! (LOL)

If the fallen angel interpretation is indeed a valid description of the state of affairs in Genesis 6, then it is likely that Satan, as a fallen angel himself, must also have the ability to cohabit with a human female. By definition any offspring produced by such an ungodly union would be the seed of the serpent and the son of perdition! (page 278)

Satan is a roaring lion seeking whom he may devour, and Christians are letting him do it because they refuse to acknowledge what he is doing through the aliens. You cannot pray against something you do not believe exists! Christians should be praying against these aliens and their agenda. They are not merely Fallen angels pretending to be aliens!

If I have not made it clear already, spirits do not have physical DNA that can impregnate a woman. You may as well expect an angel to give you some of their blood, but they don't have any blood or sex organs. Got it?

### **Alien Soul Control**

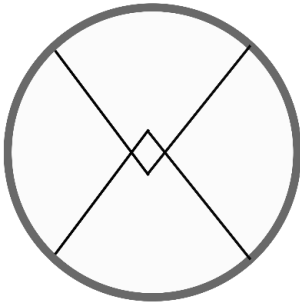
The spiritual realm is one of the 10 or more dimensions of the universe, and there is evidence that insectoids and grays can control their own souls and put them into human bodies when they impregnate a woman; it is not God who supplies the souls for the hybrids!

UFO researcher Linda Moulton Howe wrote a book in 1998 called *Glimpses of Other Realities, Vol. 2 High Strangeness*. In this book, she told the story of an abduction that occurred in 1983. The woman saw lights in the sky, and the next thing she remembered, she was still in her car, but much farther away, and the gas tank was still full. She went to a therapist who used hypnosis to uncover what happened.



Here are a few main points. On the craft, she saw many different kinds of beings, such as grays, insectoids, and the tall whites. One alien took her to a long room lined on each side with tall tubes, each with an alien body inside. She was shown one particular body of a female with black wavy hair that was about 8 feet tall. She was told, “*This is your body.*” The body had large, almond-shaped eyes, similar to the grays.

The tall white beings wore tight jumpsuits with a round patch featuring two pyramids designed on it; one pyramid intersected the other, which was upside-down, thus forming a small square in the center of the patch. She was told that it represents “*The merging of two worlds.*” This suggests that they are merging their world with Earth; to put it another way, they plan to take over Earth and the human species! I made a similar image with Photoshop.



Then in 2020, Linda reported in a YouTube video that she received a phone call from that lady, who was now 82 years old and living in a nursing home. She had failed to take her medicine, and her lungs had filled up with water; she had stopped breathing and died. She then saw a bright light and was standing in front of her other body on the spacecraft.

“I knew that I had occupied that body before. . . . I was going home.”  
(*Alien Abductee - Abductee is Shown Human Cloning Technology*, Earthfiles, YouTube channel)

She was about to enter the body when she suddenly returned to her human body, and the next thing she remembered was waking up in the hospital a couple of days later. So she called Linda and told her the rest of the story. She said Linda could now use her name, but I will only call her A.A. She had lived a normal human life as a Black woman, was divorced twice, and had a daughter.

When a normal human angel-soul dies, they go to heaven or hell or perhaps somewhere in between, but they do not go to an alien body on a UFO. This means that these beings have their own souls that they can control, and they are putting them into an unknown number of humans. She was likely NOT a hybrid but a full human; her mother was likely impregnated by aliens while on board a UFO. (More evidence on this subject shortly.)

Lynne Dickie spent several years completely immersed in the New Age movement to the point of becoming a Reiki healer. People would even levitate during her sessions. However, she eventually realized that it was all evil deception and got out of it. In her interview with L. A. Marzulli, she had this bit of information to share:

[M]y mentor told me there were three different types of souls on Earth: ones that were E.T. souls, angelic, and Earthbound souls, and she told me I was an E.T. soul. Then she told me that E.T.s didn't have the same god as the other types of souls. (*The Alien Interviews*, page 88 PDF edition.)

Notice the three types of souls: ET souls are controlled by the ETs; the angel souls are good angels that are born on Earth; the earthbound souls are likely the Fallen angels who God has condemned to be bound to Earth until such time that they repent of their rebellion and become good angels again. Hell is in the Earth.

It is sad that some of those New Age people know more about what is happening than Christians; they just choose to follow the wrong spirits for some reason.

Linda Moulton Howe reported she received another letter from Linda Porter in March 1991. Born in 1946, Linda Porter said she had many alien abductions that began when she was young, and she wrote about what she learned aboard the UFOs. The letter included:

"If you could look directly into these creatures' eyes, you'd realize that every detail of your life, no matter how personal, how mundane, how minute, is known to them. It makes me wonder, are we some kind of Ken and Barbie dolls being played with by an emotionally immature race of beings with no sense of morality?

"Or, are we pawns held in the grasp of a dying race that will do *anything* for their own survival, including cold-blooded manipulation of another species and the brutal mutilation of helpless animals? [referring to cattle mutilations]

"Unless a person has been through the trauma of an abduction, they cannot comprehend how these entities can strip the mind and soul as easily as they strip the clothes off a body. They scan details of a person's life with such facility that they make you feel as if you are an interesting piece of lint caught between their toes.

"In the blink of an eye, these beings devastate all personal freedom, all sense of privacy, and all prospects for living a normal existence. A person's life is never the same again. He or she is changed forever." (*Revelations From Alien Encounters*, 2/21/2017, YT, Gaia channel)

Linda Porter said she was shown how the aliens transferred a soul from an old man who was dying into another body that was a clone, which had been prepared for him. The clones were in tubes like those previously described, and the same soul transfer would happen to her in the future. But until then, they would keep her alive because, as Linda M. Howe put it, *“it was vital that Linda Porter’s soul entity continue in the same genetic body container that she had been born with, in order to accomplish an unknown alien agenda”* (Ibid).

This tells me that her brain contains programming that will be lost if her soul is transferred into another body; which means she was programmed to do things for them when they attempt their takeover.

“I got the impression,” [Linda Porter] said, “the aliens do not like to do this soul transfer very often. Actually, I got the feeling the aliens are not supposed to be doing this at all. But they seem to be backed into a corner and have no other recourse. They also seem to be trying to hide all of this from some higher form of life; whatever the authority is that prohibits this soul transfer also prohibits ETs from interfering on this planet Earth. But the grays are interfering, whoever the authority is, is much higher evolved than they are and wield a great deal of power over many, many, other realms of existence.” (Ibid)

Notice that this woman has no idea who might not approve of the aliens transferring a soul or interfering on Earth, and who has power over many realms. Has she not heard of God and the angels? LOL

Another story appears to indicate that a soul, likely one of theirs, was put into a human fetus aboard a UFO; then it was born on Earth and lived a normal human life. This person then had many alien abductions to study how it was getting along.

It seems very evident that they are learning as much as they possibly can about humans and life on Earth, because they plan to make Earth their permanent home. All without invading with weapons.

### **One-World Government**

The New Age movement is deep into aliens, whom they often channel, and believe every word that they say. Chuck Missler commented:

The New Age literature is replete with messages from extraterrestrials who claim that they are our creators. Depending on the source read, there are at least half a dozen races of alleged extraterrestrials vying for the title of “god.” (*Alien Encounters*, page 139)

Throughout the history of alleged extraterrestrial contact there is one theme that dominates ETs’ messages to mankind. In order to survive,

we must unify our resources into a global society, with a world governing body and global religion. (Ibid, page 158)

Even though I do not believe the Antichrist will be an alien, it is entirely possible that the aliens and HETs could be behind the push for a one-world government; i.e. the WEF and the UN's Agenda 2030, which includes totalitarian control, reducing the global population, and microchipping every human. Some of these "global elites" could even be alien-human hybrids. Some could even be reptilian shapeshifters. Not all hybrids are raised on board UFOs, because the HETs are also having children!

### Who Is In Control?

Various authors have alleged that aliens are secretly controlling the world through the above-mentioned organizations and many other groups. The more you dig, the more evidence you find that points in that direction. For example, one person used a powerful microscope to examine the details of both USA and EU money. Here is what he found.



In March of 2026, former Congressman Matt Gaetz said on the Benny Show podcast, that he was told by a uniformed member of the US Army that they have “*hybrid breeding programs where captured aliens were breeding with humans to create some hybrid race.*” Notice that the US

Army is creating this hybrid race using captured aliens and humans they abducted from migrant caravans and war zones.

In response to the podcast, Senator Babet in Australia tweeted:

“I wish I could say more but unfortunately everything I know about the alien hybrid program is classified. Let's just say some of you would be very surprised who's not entirely human. That's all I'm authorized to disclose at this time.”

So it appears that some of these hybrids are known to be in positions of power and authority.

## Chapter 17

### Reptilians And Shapeshifters

*"I am not a lizard." The Facebook founder [Mark Zuckerberg] paused to lick his lips. (The Washington Post, 6/15/ 2016)*

#### Reptilians and More

As we have seen, only 200 survivors from Rahab came down and caused the Fall of humanity, but thousands more likely went to a different star system and continued the reptilian race there. Then, millions of years later, they returned and are once again living on Earth. Therefore, not only do we have Fallen reptilian spirits here on Earth living as humans, but actual reptilians.

In the summer of 2023, an incident made national news when several people saw an object streak down from the sky and crash in a Las Vegas backyard. The police investigated, and security camera footage was released, but was of poor quality. Later, one image was released that had a discernible creature on it. The image was black and white and taken at night in heavy undergrowth, so I increased the resolution and colorized it in order to make the creature more visible. Its neck is thicker than Bigfoot's, and it looks like it would stand 7-8 feet:

We are expected to believe that an artist just happened to create a statue of a reptilian totally constricting a human (image on the next page); nothing to see here, just art. No, this reptilian is



figuratively engaged in a struggle to completely enslave and control a human, perhaps even to take over his body:



Located in Oslo, Norway.

### **Reptilian Shapeshifters**

In addition to human-alien hybrids walking among us and working against humanity, there are also reptilian shapeshifters. I mentioned that reptilians have been seen aboard mantis UFOs, but I also mentioned that the mantids have the ability to create any race they want; they have the DNA. However, the actual race of reptilians may not be working with the mantids and could be here carrying out their own evil agenda. They can appear human, but they are not even hybrids. Because they have the ability to assume human form, they likely have replaced humans who are in positions of wealth, power, and influence in government, entertainment, and major corporations.

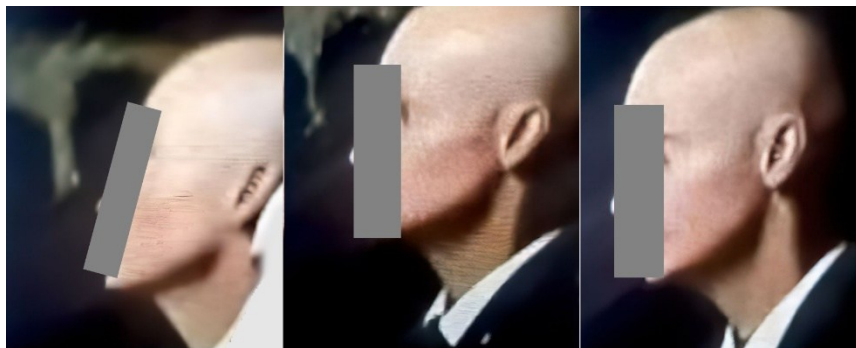
You may think that this is impossible, but there is significant supporting evidence. With so many security videos and cell phone recordings, there is evidence for actual shapeshifting. People have speculated that these beings may find it difficult to maintain their shape when they are angry, stressed, or excited.

The public first became aware that the Queen and the entire family are supposedly reptilians from author David Icke in the early 1980s,

who wrote several best-selling books on the subject. Icke did not personally know the royals, and yet he wrote book after book and spoke on TV many times with his claims. When the first book was published, I asked myself how a major book publisher could decide to publish this book, written by an unknown person, about the royals being reptilians. And then publish many more books. Is it because the reptilians want the information made public?

Icke wants people to believe that he is exposing the royals as being reptilians, but he is actually making them known. I would question why he has been allowed to publish and speak in public about them and not be visited by MIB? It is because Icke is their spokesman; they want the world to know that they are here before they officially reveal themselves. I have even seen photos of him with reptilian eyes; therefore, it is no surprise that Icke also has engaged in channeling and automatic writing, and is also very much anti-Christian.

Here is an example of shape-shifting from a cell phone video of an individual who was in a New York courtroom during one of Donald Trump's lawfare trials. The person recording said, "*look at the eyes.*" Well, the eyes were not noticeable in the video, but the ear is very noticeable and can be seen changing shape. Though the outside of it changes slightly, the inside changes considerably. I blocked the individual's face so he could not be identified, as he might want to sue me or worse:



Numerous celebrities have been photographed with reptile-like eyes, and some have even been videotaped with their eyes changing from normal to reptilian. These individuals are likely not hybrids but are replacements of the original person. One of the scariest movies I saw as a child was *Invasion of the Body Snatchers*, the plot of which suggested that humans were being replaced by aliens who looked just like

them but lacked emotions and any personality. I told myself while watching the movie, "*it is only a movie.*" But now I am wondering if the writer was somehow inspired.

The following three images are screenshots I took from a video of a movie star being interviewed, and you can clearly see her eyes morph from normal to like the edge of a coin and back again. She has claimed to be a member of the Illuminati.



The change begins, and continues into the next image:

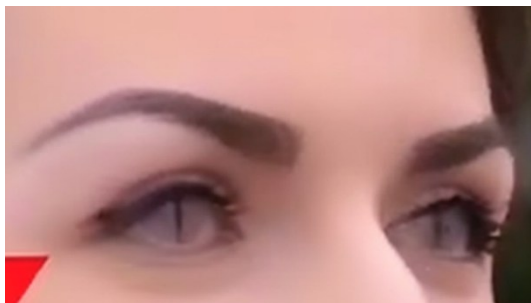
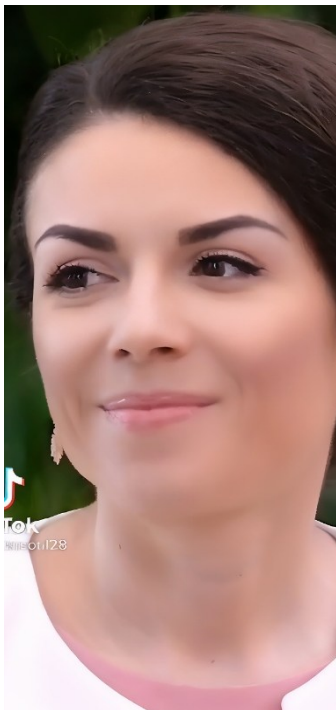


Notice that the above image appears to show a greener tint to the eyes; all I did was increase the resolution and sharpen it. So the eyes not only became reptile-like in appearance but also in color.

I suspect that at least in some cases they are intentionally showing us their eyes; they want us to know they are here. I found so many videos of singers and movie stars whose eyes go like a reptile's that I cannot include them all, plus the lighting is not good on some of them, and they are not in focus enough to reprint. I may put them into a video on my Rumble and YouTube channels.

Another lady is not a famous singer or politician, but she is very beautiful and has the ability to flip her eyes at will. She has made many videos on TikTok where she shows off the ability; therefore, I can give her name, Zhanna. She appears to be in Ukraine or a nearby country.

She has several accounts on TikTok, and they all begin with-- --"aliensoul." She also says a lot of New Age stuff and claims to be in contact with the Anunnaki.



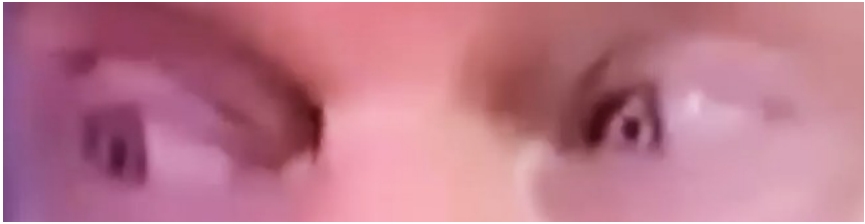
She claims she is not reptilian, but Anunnaki. Yet, she shows her neck, which appears reptilian-like underneath the skin.



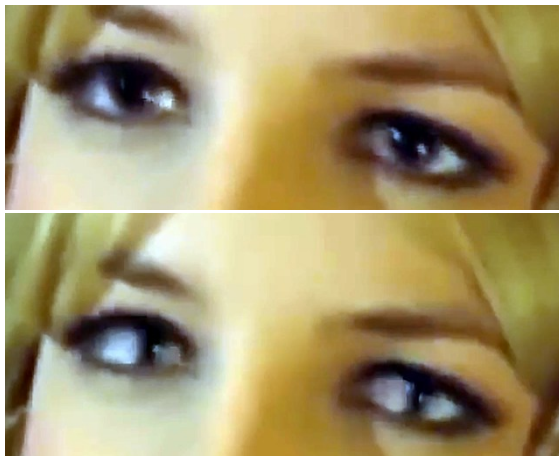
Next is a well-known liberal TV newsman:



The fellow below is either a newsman or a politician. The video was released long before the advent of AI, so I know it is not fake:

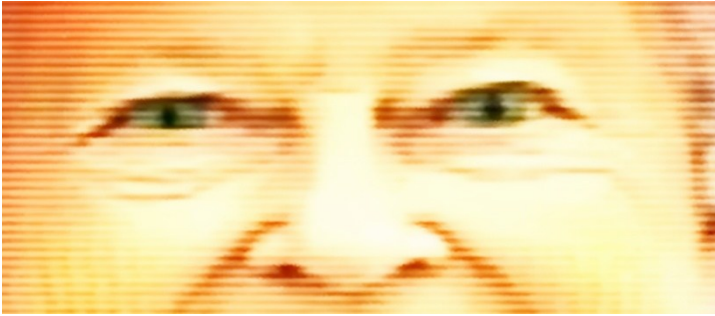


Below is famous singer. Again, I took the screenshots, so there was no altering of the eyes with Photoshop. And the video is are old, which means it originated before AI:



The Queen of England was one of the most often talked about; said to shapeshift into a large reptilian. However, if she was merely shapeshifting into the Queen, why did she grow old and die? Was it

because it was expected? Did she not really die, but merely pretend and then go back underground or onto a UFO? Perhaps they are somehow partly human.



Below is Prince Philip, the late Queen Elizabeth's husband.



Below is King Charles (Prince Charles when the photo was taken):



The entire royal family are alleged to be reptilians.



Below is another famous singer who often gives allegiance to Satan and even said she sold her soul to Satan. You can see the gradual change in the shape of her pupil, which happens pretty quickly. I had to use a video editing program to move it frame by frame to get the images of the change:



These non-human replacements all appear to be enjoying living as if they were actually human. Why wouldn't they? They take over the bodies of those who are wealthy, royalty, corporate CEOs, and government officials or hold other highly influential positions. You won't see one working hard at a menial job; those are for the humans. They even appear to be in higher positions of power than the mantis hybrids who are able to use their abilities to easily excel.

In a PBS News segment during a Democratic National Convention, then Congresswoman Nancy Pelosi said, "*we are very discreet, reptilian, cold blooded.*" And during a CNN interview, she said, "*No, I'm not a 'poor baby,' I'm more reptilian.*"

Another well-known former US politician and presidential candidate, Hillary Clinton, was being interviewed for a podcast, and the interviewer commented that Clinton never sweated, to which Clinton replied, "*I'm not really even a human being*" (Oct. 15, 2015). That comment made headlines on websites.

One article began, "*Hillary Clinton made a shocking revelation in a recent interview that does a lot to explain her boring speeches as well as her heartless nature*" (Carmine Sabia, bizpacreview.com).

If you don't recognize this next fellow, it is former US president G. W. Bush:

I am of the firm belief that at least two well-known preachers within the Charismatic Movement are also reptilians or hybrids.



### The Vatican Connection

You may suspect that these reptilians have infiltrated our governments and institutions of power, and you would be right. The official crest of Pope Gregory XIII (1502-85) has a dragon on it. By itself, it is not significant but should not be ignored considering the other evidence:



His statue (below) has two dragons on it, one on each side, with serpent-like tails.

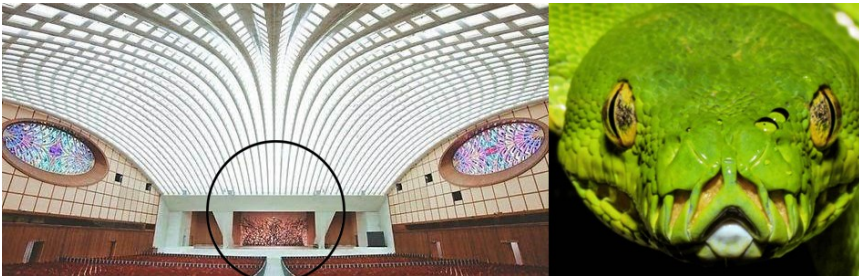


He is best known for commissioning our current calendar, the Gregorian.

But even more astonishing is this image of Earth made into a snake eye:



Let's not overlook Audience Hall, which was made to look like a snake, both inside and out:



Inside that black circle above is an image of Jesus surrounded by the rubble of a nuclear holocaust; yes, that is officially what it is. What are they telling us with this? That Christ will return with a nuclear holocaust? Or are they expecting a reptilian messiah?

And of course, the hair of Christ just accidentally looks like a reptilian! Complete with a noticeable eye.

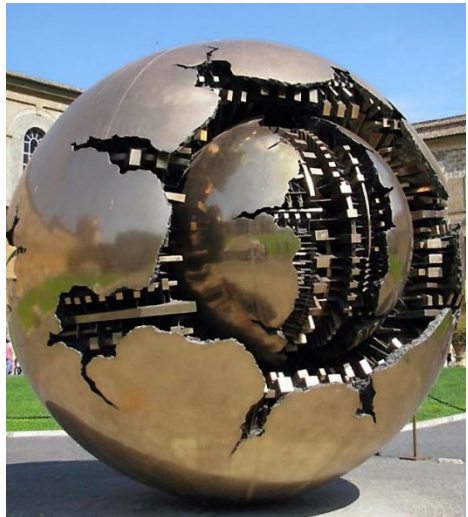


They are putting it right in front of us, *but don't believe your lyin eyes.*



Let us not ignore the giant orb created by Arnaldo Pomodoro that is also in the Vatican:

Similar orbs created by Pomodoro are found in more than 40 other locations around the world, including Ireland, the Netherlands, Poland, Japan, Israel, Iran, Saudi Arabia, Italy, and the USA. These orbs could be declaring a message, like, "*Pay attention, the orbs are here on Earth. We are claiming Earth as our own.*" But I am



sure all this connection to the Vatican is just a coincidence.

## **Final Words**

I recently saw a video someone made that showed a compilation of clips where people said during an interview on TV or online that they were with someone, and suddenly they shapeshifted into a reptilian-looking nonhuman creature. One person was Juliette Bryant, a known survivor of Jeffrey Epstein. She said in several different interviews that she saw him shapeshift into a humanoid being with a reptile-like head. So we can understand why he was so evil. (The Epstein Files confirmed that he was involved in trafficking kidnapped children, killed them, drank their blood, and ate them. He also hunted adult humans for sport, like hunting a deer.)

Bryant said when she told people she saw Epstein shapeshift into a reptile, they thought she was crazy. That is one reason why the reptilians have been able to engage in their evil acts for centuries; humanity had no knowledge of their abilities or activities among us.

I suspect that when a reptilian replaces someone, they create a clone that is part human. This way, they still grow old and die, and then they return to their reptile body stored inside of a tube. They may even, at times, cause people to see their original reptilian spirit.

## Chapter 18

### God's Plan to Save Humanity From Aliens

*God's plan and His ways of working out His plan are frequently beyond our ability to fathom and understand. We must learn to trust when we don't understand.* -- Jerry Bridges (1929-2016), evangelical Christian author

It may look bleak, but there is hope, even if they actually begin their takeover of the planet. The books of Genesis and Enoch not only tell us about the arrival of aliens to corrupt humanity and live on Earth, but Genesis also prophesied about a seed war between the seed of the woman and the seed of the serpent. When God cast Adam and Eve out of the Garden, he said to Satan:

I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your offspring and her offspring; he will bruise your head, and you will bruise his heel." (Genesis 3:15)

This passage is well-known as referring to the future coming of a human who will defeat Satan. It refers to the coming of Jesus, the Son of God, who was born of Mary; he is even now in the process of defeating Satan. Even though Satan murdered Jesus with crucifixion, Jesus rose from the dead and is alive today and working to bring humans back to God. Satan will soon be totally defeated.

*Enmity* means hatred and hostility. Christians know full well that Satan and his emissaries hate all Christians, and the information about aliens shows that most of them not only hate Christians but all humans.

Because the reptilian race of creatures are the offspring of those who once worshiped Satan on Rahab, then they are also Fallen and most likely working with Satan. Some may also be working with the insectoid mantis aliens. They genuinely believe they will win the war against God and take over the planet.

Satan believes that if he can alter human DNA to cause us to be less inclined to believe in God, it will give him the ultimate victory. The concept of the “God gene” is beyond the scope of this book, but in short, some scientists believe that a specific gene accounts for humanity’s belief in God. If the advanced aliens can edit out that gene, then Satan has won!

The mantis bugs are now seeding altered humans among us as they prepare for a total takeover. However, that is taking a long time; therefore, evil humans (perhaps shapeshifters?) are using alien tech and have created the ability to control existing humans with microchip implants. The top WEF advisor is Yuval Noah Harari, who said:

Our brains can be hacked . . . the whole idea that humans, they have this soul or spirit, and they have free will . . . so whatever I choose during the election, or in the supermarket, this is my free will; that’s over. (numerous videos & <https://streettheologian.medium.com/>)

Harari revealed more of their plan and abilities in an article:

Biometric monitoring would make Cambridge Analytica’s data hacking tactics look like something from the Stone Age. Imagine North Korea in 2030, when every citizen has to wear a biometric bracelet 24 hours a day. If you listen to a speech by the Great Leader and the bracelet picks up the tell-tale signs of anger, you are done for. (Yuval Noah Harari: the world after coronavirus, *Financial Times*, [www.ft.com](http://www.ft.com), March 20, 2020)

Harari also said, “*God is dead*,” and “*Jesus is fake news*,” which has wrongly been attributed to Klaus Schwab on social media. Harari also said, “*We just don’t need the vast majority of the population*” in the world today ([breitbart.com](http://breitbart.com)). In 2016 he said AI was going to put billions of people out of work; “*This perhaps is going to be the biggest question in 21<sup>st</sup>-century economics and politics; what to do with billions of useless humans*” ([www.koreaherald.com](http://www.koreaherald.com)). We know what their plan is; to remove them from the planet.

Their microchip will be the infamous Mark of The Beast of Revelation 13. This is called *transhumanism* and will remove people’s emotions and free will. This means, once they take the chip, they will be unable to repent and be saved.

But Jesus knew all of this would happen. He said that when he returns, it “*will be like the days of Noah*” (Matt. 24:37). How was it in Noah’s day? Why did the Flood come? We know the answer: the alien’s hybrid program and the evil advancements they brought.

In chapter 3 we learned that Satan has been seeding his “weeds,” as seen in the parable found in Matthew 13. I now continue with the remainder of the parable, which tells us that when Jesus returns, the WEEDS will be pulled up and thrown into the fire:

“Therefore as the weeds are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of this world. 41 The Son of Man shall send out His angels, and they shall gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and those who do evil, 42 and will throw them into a fiery furnace. There will be wailing and gnashing of teeth. 43 Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Whoever has ears to hear, let him hear. (Matt. 13:40-43)

The only survivors of the coming global cataclysm will be Christians. Notice that the weeds are thrown into the fire by angels. Since there are likely some good aliens who could very well also be good angels, does this predict a coming war on Earth that will have good aliens battling and destroying evil aliens? I am not saying this will actually happen; I am just wondering if it might happen. If there are good aliens here protecting us from a military-style invasion from space, then the good aliens could literally fight the evil ones and destroy them with fire.

In another parable, humans are seen as sheep and goats. When Christ returns, he will judge all people, including HETs. To the sheep he will say they can enter the Kingdom, but to the goats he will say:

“Depart from Me, you cursed, into the eternal fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.” (Matthew 25:41)

God destroyed the world once before because the Fallen aliens came down and corrupted humanity with their advanced knowledge and breeding program. The aliens doubtless became rulers of all mankind before the Flood. So it should not surprise us that another race of aliens, who could be in league with Satan and his Fallen race of reptilians, are at it again, but God will not allow them to rule the world for thousands of years as they did before the Flood.

They will only have a short time to rule and will likely be limited to the technologically developed Western nations, and then Christ returns with fire. This period right before the return of Christ is called the Great Tribulation, but even during that period, many people will be saved, which means many will not be forced to take the mark (I cannot give more details, as Bible prophecy is beyond the scope of this book).

Jesus told us about his coming with fire in Luke 17:

"Just as it was in the days of Noah, so will it be in the days of the Son of Man. They were eating, drinking, marrying, and were given in marriage until the day when Noah entered the ark. Then the flood came and destroyed them all.

"Likewise as it was in the days of Lot: They ate, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they built. But on the day that Lot departed from Sodom, fire and brimstone rained from heaven and destroyed them all. "So will it be on the day when the Son of Man is revealed." (Luke 17:26-30)

This refers to a literal fire that will burn the surface of the world when Christ returns (see also Mal. 3:19). Jesus will cause several asteroid impacts, along with many volcanic eruptions, earthquakes, great hail, and even a micronova explosion from the sun (Ben Davidson). A second sun the size of Jupiter will appear in the sky and come close to Earth, burning us with its flames. It will remain in the sky to provide light and heat after the large sun's micronova (see *The Return of Christ and Three Days of Darkness*). The Apostle Paul said:

God is just: He will pay back trouble to those who trouble you . . . This will happen when the Lord Jesus is revealed from heaven in blazing fire with his powerful angels. 8 He will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus. (2 Thes. 1:6-8)

The Native Americans also have prophecies about the world being destroyed with fire. Chief Joseph RiverWind reported that:

The Delaware, Aztec, Choctaw, Arawak Taino, and Cherokee tribes all have similar ancient flood stories that have been passed down through oral tradition. The two common factors in these traditional stories are that the earth was destroyed by water and it will be purified with fire. (RiverWind, *When The Fires Come*, page 124)

The Apostle Jude said:

Enoch, the seventh generation from Adam, also prophesied of these men, saying, "Look! The Lord is coming with ten thousand of His holy ones, to execute judgment on everyone, and to convict all who are godless of all their wicked deeds that they have committed, and of all the terrible words that godless sinners have spoken against Him." (v14-15)

Most Bible commentaries barely mention that these two verses refer to 1 Enoch 1:9. Josephus said that Adam predicted two destructions of the world, one with water the other with fire (*Antiquities of the Jews*, chap. 2, section 3).

In the same way that humanity was fooled into having the offspring of the aliens in Enoch's day, humans are once again being misled by aliens into believing that they are here to give the world an upgrade, even to our bodies; therefore, we should readily cooperate and help them. Solomon said there is nothing new under the sun, and indeed, there really is nothing new. This has all happened before.

New Age believers are eagerly anticipating merging with ET bugs, but we do not need these ETs to upgrade humanity; God has already promised us an upgrade, and it will be far better than theirs. God has told us that we shall be like Jesus, who rose from the dead; this means we shall become completely immortal beings. Our spirits will join with our bodies in a permanent way, not being a spirit inside a body:

Beloved, now are we children of God, and it has not yet been revealed what we shall be. But we know that when He appears, we shall be like Him . . . (1 Jn 3:2)

That is, we will become immortal like Jesus! When Christ returns, he will transform Christians:

But our citizenship is in heaven, from where also we await for our Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ, who will transform our body of humiliation, so that it may be conformed to His glorious body, according to the working of His power even to subdue all things to Himself. (Phil. 3:20-21)

He has given to us exceedingly great and precious promises, so that through these things you might become partakers of the divine nature and escape the corruption that is in the world through lust. (2 Pet. 1:4)

Jesus can walk through walls, appear and disappear, and live on Earth or in heaven, which means we will have that ability as well. (See also 1 Cor. 15:52).

You may wonder why we need immortal bodies if our souls go to heaven when we die. It is because God is creating a super race of immortal humans who will not be living in heaven, but on another planet called New Earth (Rev. 21:1); though it could have a different actual name, that is what the Bible calls it.

Jesus said in John:

I am going to prepare a place for you. 3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself, that where I am, you may be also. 4 You know where I am going, and you know the way."

We will NOT be sitting in our mansions in heaven listening to angels sing for a billion years. Neither will be praising God for a billion

years. Nor will we live like Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden on New Earth; I believe that some immortals and angels are already on New Earth constructing mansions powered by advanced energy devices. We will not only live on this planet located in a far-distant galaxy, but we could even have our own Interplanetary Space Vehicles.



“The mills of God grind slowly, but they grind exceeding small.”  
(*Sibylline Oracles*, Book 8, Schneemelcher, page 668)

## Chapter 19

### Conclusion

*All truth passes through three stages. First, it is ridiculed. Second, it is violently opposed. Third, it is accepted as being self-evident. --*

Arthur Schopenhauer

Enoch learned writing, science, and wisdom from the Watchers, but he rejected the casting of spells and other evils that were also taught. This is the same thing Christians must do today: whether it is in the public schools and colleges or through the rest of our lives, we can keep learning the good but should reject what is harmful or evil.

Some Christians will speak against this book because it does not agree with what churches and denominations currently teach. Jesus faced this same situation. He was not a priest of either the Pharisees or the Sadducees; he was an outsider. Both of those groups believed they had the truth, but as it turned out, neither of them taught the original Law of Moses. When Jesus began preaching, they became angry because he taught things they did not agree with. So they hated him to the point of killing him.

One of Satan's greatest achievements was the Roman Empire, which had so much power and might that it could slaughter millions of people who would not bow the knee to them; such as when they slaughtered the Carthaginians and enslaved the few survivors. Rome literally tore people apart, threw them to the lions, crucified them, dragged them through the streets, and sexually abused them on a massive scale. The emperor Hadrian even had a nine-year-old boy lover. But while Satan was riding high in his power, God sent his Son to be born as a human who taught his Apostles the Gospel of Salvation by faith.

When pagan Rome fell to Christianity, God viewed it as a great victory, even though his truth had become partly corrupted. God's

Kingdom had not yet fully come upon the world, but it was a step closer. Since that time, God has continued to use imperfect humans to proclaim his Gospel and grow his Kingdom. This battle between good and evil has been waging since the Fall of Adam and Eve, and the Gospel message has now spread through 80-90% of the world's population. However, it has been difficult to keep pace with the explosive population growth. There are now about 2.6 billion professing Christians, and the war continues. Christians are being killed around the world every single day by various groups, which are all under Satan's influence.

As we approach the end of the age, this war is heating up. There are literally several different groups of people who are actively attempting to take over the world. And now we have the aliens who are also attempting a global takeover. This planet is a hotbed of radical political and religious ideologies, but none of them will succeed except Christianity. However, unlike the other groups, God's Kingdom will not win through warfare or forced conversion or compliance but through God eliminating all who do not willfully repent and convert before the return of Christ.

We know that demons and also aliens can put thoughts into the minds of humans. Is this the reason that many humans are taking drastic steps to reduce the world population through wars and the intentional poisoning of our air, water, land, crops, and food, and even using many other high-tech means?

It is probable that the aliens want to reduce the global population before they attempt their takeover because a lower human population will be easier to control. It would be difficult to control 8.5 billion people. They plan to have only 500 million people in a few large cities on each continent; each city will have one of those spinning devices installed underground to mind-control its inhabitants (see page 234).

I saw a video of a certain individual who has injected many millions with a vaccine. As he was speaking, you could see a section of his upper throat bulge out, much like a frog's throat does, though not as prominently. Therefore, I fully believe he is a reptilian, or at least a hybrid.

In addition to the above-mentioned methods of reducing the population, there will also be intentional natural disasters: hurricanes, earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, etc. God will allow these events as part of his judgment upon the world during the final years. Yes, God can and

does allow certain evil events to occur; thus, it becomes judgment from God, even though he does not instigate those events.

For example, when Babylon was expanding under the rule of Nebuchadnezzar, some of his emissaries visited Jerusalem. King Hezekiah stupidly showed them the treasure rooms in the Temple which were piled with gold:

Hezekiah welcomed them and showed them all the treasure house, the silver, the gold, the spices, the fine oil, all the armory, and all that was found in his storehouses. . . . (2 Kings 20:13)

Once the Babylonians learned about the gold, an invasion was planned, and God didn't stop it. Thus, it became a judgment for their sins. (The time when an angel killed 185K of the enemy who had surrounded Jerusalem occurred many years before, when the Assyrians attacked.)

One of these "natural" disasters will be sending an asteroid to impact into the ocean, which will cause a huge tsunami and wipe out all of the world's coastal cities. And we know that God will not send a good alien orb to move or destroy it, because it is prophesied to happen in Revelation, chapter 8.

Online, there are individuals who have claimed that since we have advanced alien tech, such as UFOs, they are no longer afraid of an asteroid impact; we can simply "*zap it away*." I replied with this comment:

On the contrary, I am more afraid. They can capture one and put it just outside the atmosphere, while still traveling at thousands of miles per hour, and bang, it hits the Atlantic Ocean.

Revelation 8 tells us that *something like a burning mountain*, all ablaze, will be "*cast into the sea*." The Greek for "cast" means "*to throw*" (G906). This suggests that it does not merely fall into the ocean; it does not simply collide with the ocean as it travels through space; it will be intentionally thrown into the ocean. And we now know that both aliens and humans possess the technology and the lack of morals to cause



it to impact. (The passage does not say that an angel throws the object into the sea. Before the events of the chapter begin, an angel takes fire from the altar in heaven and pours it upon Earth, but that is merely symbolic and should not be taken literally.)

Before I wrote this book, I was praying that God would save America from the Deep-State and the growing totalitarian threat from a global government, but I now include in my prayers that God will save us from the aliens and their plot to take over the world. I pray that God will do whatever it takes to eliminate the alien threat. God wants us to pray in accordance with his will, just as Daniel prayed for the return of the Jews from captivity in Babylon, even though he knew of Jeremiah's prophecy that it would happen. He understood that God expects us to pray for certain events to occur; in some cases, those events will not happen unless God's people pray for them to happen.

I know how scary the alien evil is, but I also know how powerful God is. Nothing will stop Yahweh (Yehovah) from bringing his Kingdom to Earth; certainly not those mantis insectoids from another planet. Those giant insects picked the wrong planet to invade.

There is no need for the knowledge of what is happening to fill anyone with fear; God knows exactly what is happening, and his plan is not in danger of being derailed by godless humans or godless aliens. His Kingdom is on track, and it will arrive just as prophesied in the Bible.

Jesus knew the aliens were going to show up again with another planetary invasion, and he will soon destroy them.

The fact that ETs are so intelligent could cause some people to believe them when they claim there is no God. However, as an expert in Bible prophecy, I can tell you beyond any doubt that the Antichrist will NOT be an alien. You will not see an alien standing behind a microphone and giving a speech to the world: "*Earthlings, I command you to bow down and worship me!*"

The fact that they have such big brains and are super smart could cause them to believe that they know more than they actually do. They essentially become blind to how much they don't know, such as the knowledge of God's plan for humanity and Earth.

Since humans were once reptilians, why do dead people look human and not reptilian? Based on all of my research and analysis, once an angel enters a fetus, irreversible changes begin. One of the changes is that it takes on the appearance of that body; even if it dies as a fetus,

it will then grow up in heaven and look the way it would have looked on Earth. It has undergone many permanent changes caused by becoming joined with human DNA.

Therefore, when the former reptilian creatures who Fell away from God and were killed when Rahab exploded are born on Earth, they undergo the same changes. Though they were once reptilian, they are now human and will go to hell as humans if they do not repent.

If you want to make it to heaven when you die, the only way is to give your life to Jesus. Ask him to forgive your sins, read the Bible and pray, and seek to follow his teachings. Do not worry that you will not be sinless; Christians are not sinless saints, though we are trying to be. Therefore, you don't have to be perfect to get to heaven. The important thing is to ask God to forgive you when you sin.

Some Christians are delivered from a particular major sin when they get saved, while others are not, which requires them to learn to accept that they are forgiven. This helps them to grow and learn the true meaning of grace. Having a genuine relationship with God and following the teachings of Jesus are the most important parts of being a Christian.

Science and knowledge are not merely about evidence but also how we interpret the evidence, which becomes our paradigm, or frame of reference. We develop a framework that governs how we view and understand the world from all the knowledge we know. Our knowledge base should begin with the Bible, but it should NOT be limited to the Bible; all truth cannot be contained in the pages of Scripture, that is impossible. We must be able to correctly process information so that we exclude what is false and accept what is true. Hopefully, this book has added significantly to your knowledge bank so you can better understand not only aliens but also God's long-range plan for humanity.

If this book has influenced you to become a Christian, welcome to the family; your name is now written in the Lamb's Book of Life.

For more information about the Wrath of God upon the world, see my three-book series on Bible prophecy. Book 1 is already published; Book 2 will come out in the fall of 2026, Book 3 in Jan. 2027.

BK1: *THE FALL OF BABYLON USA With Prophecies of Civil War and Invasion.*

BK2: *BIBLE PROPHECY REVEALED.*

BK3: *THE RETURN OF CHRIST and Three Days of Darkness.*

## Recommended Books and Videos For Additional Information

In these videos and books you will learn many more details about what I only mention briefly in this book and many details I have not mentioned at all. But don't expect every point in them to be 100% accurate or even in agreement with each other, because the researchers are still putting the pieces together. There are also intentional lies. Even recognized authorities and whistleblowers with best-selling books do not tell the whole truth, because they are spreading disinformation.

There are many more good videos and books than those mentioned here, but I could not examine them all.

### Videos available on Amazon Prime:

*Alien Disclosure Files (Season 1)*: (2023) This program is a very good introduction for anyone just beginning to dive into the subject of UFOs and aliens. It stays away from conspiracies, yet goes deep and covers areas not mentioned in this book.

\* *Being Taken*

\* *ETs Among Us: UFO Witnesses and Whistleblowers*

\* *UFOTV Presents The Day Before Disclosure* (2017)

\* *UFOTV Presence: I Know What I Saw* (2015)

\* *UFOTV Presents: Out of the Blue - The Definitive Investigation On UFOs* (2012)

\* *Extraordinary: The Seeding* (2019)

\* *Travis - The True Story Of Travis Walton* (2016)

\* *Who Saw The Men in Black* (2021).

There are also several good YouTube channels with informative information about aliens and UFOs, including: Area52, Jesse Michels, Redacted, Cristina Gomez, and many more.

### Books:

Dewhurst, Richard J. *The Ancient Giants Who Ruled America*. Bear & Company, 2013.

Vallee, Jacques and Chris Aubeck. *Wonders in the Sky: Unexplained Aerial Objects from Antiquity to Modern Times*. (2010)

DeSouza, John. *The Extra-Dimensionals: True Tales and Concepts of Alien Visitors*.

Friedman, Stanton T. and Kathleen Marden. *Fact, Fiction, and Flying Saucers: The Truth Behind the Misinformation, Distortion, and Derision by Debunkers, Government Agencies, and Conspiracy Conmen.*

Jacobs, David M. *The THREAT: Revealing the Secret Alien Agenda .*

Mack, John. *Abduction: Human Encounters with Aliens.* Scribner, 2007.

Marzulli, L.A. *The Alien Interviews.* Spiral of Life, 2008.

I do not recommend *Close Encounters of the Fifth Kind* (Amazon Prime) because it is so totally one sided, making ETs nice and friendly and it even claims the government conducted abductions in the guise of ETs to make people afraid of ETs. Sorry dudes, there is literally a TON of evidence that ETs are in fact abducting people and doing cattle mutilations.

### **Scriptures for salvation:**

John 3:16:

For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life.

Romans 6:23:

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

Acts 3:19:

Therefore repent and be converted, that your sins may be wiped away.

Romans 8:14:

For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are the sons of God.

Romans 10:9-10:

. . . if you confess with your mouth Jesus is Lord, and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved, 10 for with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

Ephesians 2:8-9:

For by grace you have been saved through faith, and this is not of yourselves. It is the gift of God 9 not of works, so that no one should boast. John 5:24: